

Oral Roberts University

## Digital Showcase

---

Empowered21 Publications

Empowered 21

---

2023

## Spirit-Empowered Evnagelist

Global Evangelist Alliance

Follow this and additional works at: <https://digitalshowcase.oru.edu/e21publications>

---



THE  
G

# THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

GLOBAL EVANGELIST ALLIANCE

**The Spirit Powered Evangelist**  
© 2023 by The Global Evangelist Alliance

Published by: Global Evangelist Alliance & Empowered 21  
Address 7777 S Lewis Ave, Tulsa, OK 74171  
Website: <https://globalevangelistalliance.com>  
ISBN: 978-1-950971-27-5

Special thanks to everyone who helped to make this project possible: Daniel King, Joe Oden, Ashley Wilson, Kristene O'Dell, Rick Kern, Sam Rodriguez, Nathan Morris, Dustin Smith, & Eleanor Curran.

All Rights reserved under International Copyright Law. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical — including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system — without permission in writing from the publisher.

Unless otherwise noted, all Scripture passages are taken from THE HOLY BIBLE, New International Version (NIV)®, copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984, 2011 by Biblica, Inc.® Used by permission. All rights reserved worldwide.

Scripture quotations marked KJV are taken from THE HOLY BIBLE, KING JAMES VERSION® PUBLIC DOMAIN.

Scripture quotations marked NKJV are taken from THE HOLY BIBLE, New King James Version®, copyright © 1982 by Thomas Nelson. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked NASB are taken from taken from the New American Standard Bible. Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1973, 1975, 1977, 1995 by the Lockman Foundation. Used by Permission.

Scripture quotations marked MSG are taken from THE MESSAGE, copyright © 1993, 2002, 2018 by Eugene H. Peterson. Used by permission of NavPress. All rights reserved. Represented by Tyndale House Publishers, Inc.

Scripture quotations marked NLT are taken from the Holy Bible, New Living Translation, copyright © 1996, 2004, 2015 by Tyndale House Foundation. Used by permission of Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Carol Stream, Illinois 60188. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked ESV are taken from the Holy Bible, English Standard Version®. ESV® Text Edition: 2016. Copyright © 2001 by Crossway, a publishing ministry of Good News Publishers. The ESV® text has been reproduced in cooperation with and by permission of Good News Publishers. Unauthorized reproduction of this publication is prohibited. All rights reserved.

Scripture quotations marked “AMP” are from the Amplified Bible Copyright © 2015 by The Lockman Foundation, La Habra, CA 90631. All rights reserved.

# Contents

Foreword   Billy Wilson	5
What is an Evangelist?   Daniel King	7
Are You an Evangelist?   Daniel Kolenda	23
The Need for the Evangelist   Ben Fitzgerald	53
The Call of the Evangelist   Bernie Moore	65
Vital Questions for Every Evangelist   LaDonna Osborn	81
History of Evangelism   Daniel King	95
Evangelism and the Holy Spirit   Donna Shambach	113
The Spirit Empowered Evangelist   Joe Oden	127
The Leading of the Holy Spirit for the Evangelist   Mattheus van der Steen	141
The Journey of Faith   Nathan Morris	155
The Gift of Healing and the Evangelist   Jean-Luc Trachsel	165
The Miraculous Signs of the Evangelist   Rubens Cunha	171
The Gift of Deliverance & Evangelism   Siegfried Tomazsewski	191
How to Reach a Closed Nation With the Gospel   Mattheus van der Steen	203
How to Do Cross-Cultural Evangelism   Siegfried Tomazsewski	219
Prophetic Evangelism   Matthew Helland	231
Helping Others Through the Power of Faith   Teo Hayashi	245
The Character of an Evangelist   Travis Holownia	255
The Prayer Life of the Evangelist   Jeri Hill	275
Are You an Evangelist or Revivalist?   Jason Frenn	287
Partnering with the Local Church and Follow Up   Russell Benson	301
The Unique Partnership Between the Evangelist & the Church   Raphaël Anzenberger	315
Biblical Unity and Evangelistic Overflow   Andrew Palau	329



# FOREWORD

Billy Wilson

**A**ccording to the United Nations, the world's population recently exceeded eight billion people. Eight billion is a big number. If one tried to count to eight billion by counting twenty-four hours a day, it would take an entire lifetime. The amazing truth is that Jesus loves every single one of these eight billion people that are alive today.

Right now, we are seeing a great move of the Holy Spirit, especially in the Global South. In 2006, 50,000 people from 115 nations gathered together for a centennial celebration of the Azusa Street Revival. From this Azusa Centennial a new movement of Spirit-empowered believers was birthed named Empowered21 (E21). This is a relational network of ministers from around the world who believe in the power of the Holy Spirit and are united together by a mission to reach everyone on earth for Jesus.

Empowered21 wants everyone on earth to have a relationship with Jesus and to encounter the Holy Spirit. Right before Jesus ascended into heaven, He gave the church the Great Commission to "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to everyone." We believe it is actually possible for us to fulfill this mandate in our generation.

That is why we have adopted the vision that: Every person on earth will have an authentic encounter with Jesus Christ through the power and presence of the Holy Spirit by Pentecost 2033, the 2,000 year anniversary of the first Pentecost when the Holy Spirit fell on 120 disciples in the upper room.

The task of reaching everyone will require everyone in the church to be involved. We are calling pastors, evangelists, missions minded people, and anyone who wants to be involved in the Great Commission to join us in this divine mandate. By working together, it is possible that over the next decade we could have the

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

greatest Great Commission effort in the history of Christianity, and perhaps by the grace of God we can reach everyone for Jesus Christ.

Recently, I asked God, “How are we going to reach everyone?” I felt the Holy Spirit replied, “One at a time.” If we focus on the one, God will help us to ultimately reach everyone. We want to re-personalize the Great Commission and put the focus on the individual.

We need everyone to help reach everyone for the glory of God. We are calling everyone in the church to get involved by sharing their faith, loving people, and praying for the lost.

Over the next decade, I believe God wants to accelerate evangelism. The world population is accelerating, knowledge is accelerating, technology is accelerating, and the Holy Spirit can accelerate us and help us get this task done. With this acceleration our generation can complete the Great Commission for our generation.

Empowered21 is calling together Spirit-empowered believers from around the world to unite in an effort to lead people to Jesus. Under the E21 banner we have organized the Global Evangelists Alliance (GEA). This worldwide alliance of evangelists is dedicated to spreading the gospel to everyone around the world.

This book is a reflection of the passion of E21 and the GEA to reach people for Jesus. In these pages you will be motivated and trained to share your faith with those around you. Perhaps you will even be inspired to take the gospel to the ends of the earth!

There are eight billion people in the world. Each one with an eternal soul. They will either spend eternity in heaven with Jesus or in hell without Him. Our responsibility is to help them to have a chance to hear and to respond to the good news.

Would you join us in this mission to introduce everyone to Jesus? We need your help. The world is waiting for you.

# WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

Daniel King

## SYNOPSIS

What is an evangelist? In the New Testament, the only person who is called an evangelist is Phillip. In this lesson, Daniel King examines the life of Phillip the Evangelist to help you understand what a biblical evangelist is called to do.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST:

Dr. Daniel King is a missionary evangelist who has traveled to over 70 nations in his quest for souls. His goal is to lead 1,000,000 people to Jesus every year through massive gospel festivals, distribution of literature, and leadership training. Daniel has written over twenty books including, "You Can Become a Master Soulwinner," "How to Preach the Gospel," and "Proof God is Real." He has more than 600,000 books in print. Daniel is the host of "The Evangelism Podcast" and he has interviewed over 250 evangelists, pastors, missionaries, and church growth experts. Because of his experience and research on evangelism, he is widely regarded as one of the world's leading experts in mass evangelism.

For more info, visit: [www.kingministries.com](http://www.kingministries.com)





## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

**T**he word “evangelist” is mentioned three times in the New Testament. The meaning of the word evangelist in the Greek language is, “One who brings good news.” In ancient times, after a victorious battle, the general would send a messenger back to the city. The messenger would run as fast as he could, reaching the city all out of breath. His message was something like, “Guess what guys? We won the battle!” Today, that’s what we do as evangelists. We bring good news to the world saying, “Guess what everyone? Jesus won the battle!” We are messengers of the good news that the battle is won.

The first time the term evangelist is mentioned in the Scriptures is found in Ephesians 4:11, “And He (Jesus) gave some as apostles, and some as prophets, and some as evangelists, and some as pastors and teachers for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the building up of the body of Christ until we all attain to the unity of faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God, to a mature man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ” (NASB). So, the evangelist, of course, preaches good news to people. But according to this Scripture, the evangelist is one of these fivefold ministry gifts that is given to the body of Christ. This is done to equip the saints for works of service and for edification of the body. The role of the evangelist is to train people in evangelism. In Mark 16:15 Jesus said to “...go into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature” (NKJV). That was a command given to every believer and it is called the Great Commission. It’s not just a great suggestion, it is a command to us to go and preach the gospel to every single person here on this earth. Again, that command was given to every believer, but there are some who will operate out of this “gift of evangelism.” It is the job of the evangelist to preach the good news, but then also to equip the body of Christ to be involved in going out and doing evangelism.

The second time the word evangelist is mentioned is when the Apostle Paul gives Timothy advice. His young disciple, Timothy, served as a pastor in the city of Ephesus. This is the advice Paul gives. “But you, keep your head in all situations, and endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry” (2 Timothy 4:5). Paul clearly tells Timothy to do the work of an evangelist.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Sometimes, being an evangelist is hard work. People often have the misguided idea that all an evangelist does is preach a message from a platform in front of thousands and everyone applauds. That's great when that happens, but, most evangelism involves hard work. If you are called to be an evangelist, don't be afraid of working hard—ministry involves hard work.

In the book of Acts, we see the third time that the word evangelist is mentioned. We meet a man known as Phillip the evangelist. Luke records Paul's travels in the Book of Acts and he writes, "Leaving the next day, we reached Caesarea and stayed at the house of Phillip the evangelist, one of the Seven. He had four unmarried daughters who prophesied" (Acts 21:8-9). The only person in the entire New Testament who is specifically called an evangelist is a man living in Caesarea named Phillip. Caesarea was built right beside the ocean and was known as a sinful city. Sailors would dock and enter the city doing what sailors are known to do. Caesarea was also full of temples dedicated to Roman gods. It's this city where Phillip the Evangelist ministers. It's also very interesting that he had four virgin daughters who ministered with him—they all prophesied. God doesn't just call individuals, He often calls entire families. He is a generational God as He made clear in Exodus 3:6, "I am the God of your father—the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob" (NKJV). I believe it is significant that not only is Philip an evangelist, but his entire family is serving with him in ministry. I'm actually a third-generation missionary. My grandparents were missionaries, my parents are missionaries, and now I'm a missionary. I'm also raising my son and daughter to be excited about sharing the gospel with people. Similarly, Philip's four daughters are ministering with him and they have kept themselves pure in a sinful city. That's beautiful. God gave us Phillip as a good example of what an evangelist's family should look like.

Interestingly enough, Phillip didn't start out his ministry as an evangelist. The first time Phillip is mentioned is at the beginning of Acts, Chapter 6, where he's called to be a deacon, one who serves. "In those days when the number of disciples was increasing, the Hellenistic Jews among them complained against the Hebraic Jews because their widows were being overlooked in the daily distribution of food. So, the Twelve gathered all the disciples together and said,

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

‘It would not be right for us to neglect the ministry of the word of God in order to wait on tables. Brothers and sisters choose seven men from among you who are known to be full of the Spirit and wisdom. We will turn this responsibility over to them and will give our attention to prayer and the ministry of the word.’ This proposal pleased the whole group. They chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit; also, Phillip and five other men. They presented these men to the apostles who prayed and laid their hands on them” (Acts 6:1-6).

When Phillip first appears, he is actually serving food at the tables. Every ministry begins with someone who has the heart of a servant. Jesus said that if you want to be great in the Kingdom of God, you need to be the servant of all. He taught that the greatest in the Kingdom is the one who serves (see Mark 10:43-45). Jesus Himself said, “I did not come to be served but to serve” (Matthew 20:28).

So, here’s Phillip, full of the Holy Spirit, full of passion for God, and his first opportunity in ministry is to serve tables. If you want to be called into ministry, if you want to be an evangelist, find a place to serve—go and serve in your local church. Phillip was willing to do whatever it took to stay close to God. If they needed someone to clean the toilets, he would have raised his hand and said, “Pick me. Pick me. I’m willing to do whatever it takes. I want to fulfill God’s call upon my life.” If you want to be used by God, find a place where you can serve, where you can be a part of what God is doing, then, God will be able to promote you. We see how God promotes Phillip because later he is in the position of the evangelist.

Phillip’s ministry is highlighted in Acts, Chapter 8 which begins by describing a tremendous revival in the city of Samaria that he is leading. Then, in the second half of the chapter, Phillip witnesses, one-on-one, to the Ethiopian Eunuch. Like a two-edged sword, the ministry of the evangelist includes two different sides, both of which are placed on full display in the account of Phillip’s ministry profiled in Acts, Chapter 8.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

First, the evangelist preaches the gospel to massive crowds of people. Throughout evangelistic history, we've seen great men of God like Billy Graham and Reinhard Bonnke who preached to large crowds. But the evangelist also has the opportunity to frequently minister one-on-one to people in order to lead them to Christ. Both aspects are part of what it means to be called as an evangelist. Let's look at both examples in Acts 8. "On that day, a great persecution broke out against the church at Jerusalem and all except the apostles were scattered throughout Judea and Samaria" (Acts 8:1). Jesus had told them, "But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth" (Acts 1:8). The first seven chapters of Acts took place in Jerusalem and in Judea. It's not until we get to the eighth chapter of Acts that the prophecy of Jesus begins to be fulfilled. It is here that the apostles begin to go to Samaria and then, when Phillip witnesses to the Ethiopian eunuch, the gospel goes out to the uttermost ends of the earth.

Acts 8:4 says, "Those who had been scattered preached the word wherever they went. Phillip went down to a city in Samaria and proclaimed the Messiah there." The evangelists must answer the call to "Go!" Samaria was a town where the people did not necessarily worship Yahweh, the God of the Jews. The Samaritans had a different religion and worshiped God in a different way. Often, the evangelist is called to cross over cultural barriers, or language barriers, to go to people who are different in order to preach the gospel. Phillip leaves what's familiar and goes to a city in Samaria where he proclaimed Christ. This is the message of the evangelist—to preach about Jesus.

There are different messages preached within the body of Christ. Some people preach about having a happy marriage, while some preach about being successful in business, and yet others about prophecy. Those are all great topics, but the message of the evangelist is very simple—the evangelist is called to preach about Jesus. Start anywhere in the Bible, and the evangelist will get to Jesus just as quickly as he or she possibly can. The gospel is simple: *All have sinned and the price for sin is death. But the gift of God is eternal life in Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ died on the cross to pay the price for our sins, but He didn't stay dead. After three days, Jesus rose*

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

*from the dead and today He is alive, seated at the right hand of the Father. Everyone who calls on the name of Jesus will be saved.* That's the message of the evangelist. It's very simple, but it's focused on Jesus, the birth of Jesus, the life of Jesus, the death of Jesus, the resurrection of Jesus, and what Jesus is doing today. That's the crux of what the evangelist talks about. You don't need a complicated message, nor do you need a new message every week. The evangelist just preaches the simple gospel message over and over again, communicating to people how much God loves them, and calling people to come into a relationship with Jesus Christ.

Look at Acts 8:6-8, "When the crowds heard Phillip and saw the miraculous signs he performed, they all paid close attention to what he said. For with shrieks, impure spirits came out of many, and many who were paralyzed, or lame were healed. So, there was great joy in that city" (Acts 8:6). Here we see some of the characteristics of the evangelist. First of all, there were multitudes. When evangelists preach, often there are multitudes as people come to hear about Jesus. An evangelist will raise a ruckus in the city wherever they go because he or she tries to get everyone to come into a saving relationship with Jesus.

We also see that there are miracles because, as the Scripture assures us, God confirms His Word with signs following. When we preach the simple gospel, we can expect God to perform miracles as a way of proving that Jesus is alive. "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever" (Hebrews 13:8). The same Jesus who walked the dusty streets of Israel, healed cripples, restored sight to blind men, and restored lepers to health is alive today. Furthermore, He still has the power to heal—Jesus doesn't change, He is the same today as He was back then. When we preach about Jesus, we can *expect* to see God do great miracles.

Acts 8:7 also tells us that evil spirits were cast out. Delivering people from the bondage of evil spirits is an aspect of the evangelist's ministry that is frequently demanded of him or her. There is a war between God and Satan; a fierce conflict between good and evil, and the evangelist is right there in the middle of that war proclaiming Jesus. In our services we've seen demonic manifestations. One time, I was in the nation of Nepal and there was a woman standing over to the left-hand side of the stage. As I preached about Jesus, she cried out and began

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

to shriek. As she fell to the ground and began rolling like a snake, it became clear this woman was demon possessed. Taking authority and I said, “In the name of Jesus, come out of her you evil, tormenting spirit.” Jesus set that woman free! She stood up and began to walk. Her face had seemed very ugly before—it was all scrunched up as she cried out. However, after the demon came out, she had a smile on her face. She brushed off her dress and you could see her beauty because Jesus had changed her life.

Acts 8:8 goes on to say that “there was great joy in that city.” When Jesus is preached in a city, joy comes—however, it may take a little while. When we preach in India, we usually hold a five-night crusade. The first night, the people who come from Hindu and Muslim backgrounds typically look at me very stoically. When the band sings, no one claps, no one sings. But then, the second night someone often gets healed, and they come up and testify. They say, “Jesus healed my ear. I wasn’t able to hear but now because of Jesus, I can hear!” Faith begins to build in the people. On the third night, maybe we’ll have five, six, ten, or fifteen testimonies come up on the platform and tell what Jesus has done. By the fourth and fifth nights, people are excited—they’re clapping, they’re dancing, and they actually jump up on their feet and begin to clap with us. And as we look out over the field, great joy has come to that place because of all the people who came to know Jesus as their Lord and Savior. When the evangelist preaches, there is great joy. Hallelujah!

There are other signs that accompany the evangelist as well. “But when they believed Phillip as he preached the good news of the Kingdom of God in the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women” (Acts 8:12). When evangelists preach the gospel, in due course, people follow Christ’s mandate to be baptized. Initially, they turn their hearts to God, embrace salvation and give their lives to Jesus, then start to be discipled.

In Samaria, there was a magician known as Simon the Sorcerer. “Now for some time a man named Simon had practiced sorcery in the city and amazed all the people of Samaria. He boasted that he was someone great and all the people, both high and low, gave him their attention and exclaimed, ‘This man is rightly

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

called The Great Power of God.’ They followed him because he had amazed them for a long time with his sorcery” (Acts 8:9-11). But then, in Verse 13, we see this, “Simon, himself, believed and was baptized. And he followed Phillip everywhere, astonished by the great signs and miracles he saw” (Acts 8:13). Simon the Sorcerer, who witnessed the miracles Phillip had been doing, knew they were different from the little tricks he used to fool the people. Simon went from being amazing, to being amazed at what Jesus does.

I have heard people contend with conviction, “Oh! You shouldn’t preach on miracles because some miracles are fake.” Listen, just because there are fake dollar bills doesn’t mean that I won’t accept a real dollar bill if given to me. The same can be said of miracles—just because there are counterfeits doesn’t mean we don’t practice the real. We just need to be on the lookout for when a counterfeit gospel is preached.

But more importantly, the number one question that I get asked as an evangelist is this, “What do you do about follow up?” Sometimes, as an evangelist, that’s a very frustrating question to hear. I’m simply excited in telling people about Jesus—we’re going to the nations, we’re preaching the gospel, we’re trying to lead people to Jesus, and we’re getting people saved. And then I come back to the United States. As I am ministering in a church, maybe there’s a little old man who hasn’t led anyone to Jesus in 40 years. But he knows to ask that question, “What do you do about follow up?” We see in this same chapter in Acts, a biblical pattern for how the evangelist does follow up. “When the apostles in Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they sent Peter and John to them. When they arrived, they prayed for them that they might receive the Holy Spirit because the Holy Spirit had not yet come upon any of them. They had simply been baptized into the name of the Lord Jesus. Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit” (Acts 8:14-17).

As revival broke out in Samaria, a report was sent to where the apostles gathered in Jerusalem. Peter and John heard about Phillip’s success in ministry and came to check it out. They are the ones who discipled the people and this gives us a biblical model for follow up of new believers and for discipleship. As evangelists,



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

our primary job is to get people saved, but then we work hand-in-hand together with all of the other ministry gifts in the body of Christ. We work with the apostles, the prophets, the pastors, the teachers, everyone who has been gifted by God in certain areas—every gift is important to the body of Christ.

The evangelist is gifted in the area of going out and catching the sheep. You then need the help of other ministry gifts to clean the sheep and to cut off all the wool and to make them beautiful—the way that they're supposed to be. The biblical model for following up with new believers is for the evangelist to partner together with other ministry gifts. The evangelist is gifted to begin the process, to go into virgin territory, to go in as shock troops. We are like an elite seal team, going into an area to establish a beachhead. Then behind the evangelist comes the rest of the army. The pastors, the teachers, the prophets... they come in and they start ministering to people until the body of Christ looks the way that God wants it to look.

“When Simon saw that the Spirit was given at the laying on of the apostles’ hands, he offered them money and said, ‘Give me also this ability so that everyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the Holy Spirit’” (Acts 8:18-19). At this point, Peter was forced to rebuke Simon the Sorcerer because he thought that he could buy the gift of God. This tells me that we must never, as evangelists, be motivated by money. We see in the body of Christ today, some who seem to be motivated by the offering or receiving the offering. That is *not* the evangelists’ concern. The person who has the heart of an evangelist goes out and preaches the gospel and should never sell God’s gifts for money.

In the midst of this very successful event unfolding in Samaria where a revival has broken out and crowds of people were getting saved, something very interesting takes place. “Now an angel of the Lord said to Philip, ‘Go south to the road—the desert road—that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza’” (Acts 8:26).

You can imagine that Phillip may have argued with God a little bit when he received this instruction. Here he is having a successful meeting in Samaria with multitudes of people being saved, miracles taking place, and great reports of it all

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

spreading. Suddenly, God speaks to Phillip and says, “I want you to go down to the desert road.” You can imagine Phillip saying, “God! The desert road? I don’t want to go to the desert road. It’s hot on the desert road. There’s lots of sun on the desert road. There’s no water on the desert road. God, there’s no one out there! No one is on the desert road because it’s so hot out there!” Nonetheless, Phillip is obedient. And, as evangelists we need to be obedient to go to where God sends us because God always has someone in mind for us to minister to and a specific plan. If God speaks to you and tells you to go somewhere, whether it’s to a big crowd or to one person, you need to be obedient to the leading of the Holy Spirit.

We then read, “So he rose and went. And there was an Ethiopian, a eunuch, a court official of Candace, queen of the Ethiopians, who was in charge of all her treasure. He had come to Jerusalem to worship and was seated in his chariot, and he was reading Isaiah the prophet. And the Spirit said to Phillip, ‘Go over and join this chariot.’ So, Philip ran to him and heard him reading Isaiah the prophet and asked, ‘Do you understand what you’re reading?’ And he said, ‘How can I, unless someone guides me?’ And he invited Phillip to come up and sit with him” (Acts 8:27-31 ESV).

This Ethiopian man had traveled from the far-away nation of Ethiopia, journeying to Jerusalem to worship in the temple. Historically, Ethiopia had known of God and had gained that knowledge when the Queen of Sheba took the Word of Yahweh back to Ethiopia during her visit to King Solomon. This Ethiopian man, a very important figure in the royal court in Ethiopia, comes and spends lots of money as he travels to Jerusalem to worship God in the Temple. But, when he arrives, he is extremely disappointed because he is not allowed to go into the inner courtyard to worship in the Temple. The inner courtyard is where Jews were allowed to go to worship and where the sacrifices were performed. But Gentiles, people who were foreigners, were not allowed into that area to worship. In fact, they had a courtyard specifically for the Gentiles and that’s where they were forced to stay.

We find instructions about this in the book of Deuteronomy when God gave the law through Moses. “No one who has been emasculated by crushing or

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

cutting may enter the assembly of the Lord” (Deuteronomy 23:1). And so, this is a great disappointment to this Ethiopian eunuch. Do you know what the word eunuch means? A eunuch is a man who has had his private parts cut off. This man has been maimed, and because he is imperfect, he’s not allowed to enter into the temple of God. Additionally, the Law says, “No one born of a forbidden marriage nor any of their descendants may enter the assembly of the Lord, not even in the tenth generation” (Deuteronomy 23:2). So, this man has two strikes against him. He is a eunuch, meaning he has been maimed; he’s imperfect—and he is a foreigner. In his excitement to worship God in Jerusalem, he tries to enter the Temple, only to discover that it is an impossibility for him.

Though he must have been bitterly disappointed, it didn’t dampen his curiosity about God. He wanted to know God, so he spent a large sum of money in order to buy a copy of the Book of Isaiah. It took a year’s worth of wages to buy something like this at that time, because it would have taken a year to write. In today’s terms, he would have paid between \$50,000 to \$60,000 to buy his copy of Isaiah. That’s why God sent Phillip, the evangelist, to explain to him the Book of Isaiah. God, knowing that this Ethiopian eunuch needed Jesus and was ready to receive Him, sends the evangelist out to the desert road. He’s probably out there in the sun all by himself when suddenly he sees a chariot with this solitary figure reading a scroll. Phillip runs up to the chariot and says, “Do you understand what you’re reading?” And the Ethiopian says, “How can I unless someone explains it to me?” So, Phillip jumps up in the chariot and begins to explain to him what the book is saying.

Phillip notices that the Ethiopian is reading a quote from Isaiah 53. “He was led like a lamb to the slaughter” (Isaiah 53:7). Of course, it’s talking about Jesus. “And as a sheep before its shearers is silent, so He did not open His mouth. By oppression and judgment, he was taken away. Yet, who of his generation protested? For he was cut off from the land of the living” (Isaiah 53:7-8). The eunuch asked Philip, “Tell me, please, who is the prophet talking about, himself or someone else?” Then Philip began with that very passage of Scripture and told him the good news about Jesus” (Acts 8:34-35).

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

Here again, we see that the evangelist is teaching about Jesus. The message of the evangelist is Jesus Christ. Isaiah 53 is the wonderful chapter in Isaiah that provides a picture of what Jesus accomplished for us on the cross. Phillip simply explained what the Ethiopian was reading.

Looking at Isaiah again, it says, “Surely, He (Jesus) took up our pain and bore our suffering, yet we considered him punished by God, stricken by him, and afflicted. But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was on him, and by his wounds we are healed” (Isaiah 53:4-5). That’s what Jesus did when He died on the cross; He paid the price for our sins, and He also provided for us to be healed.

And so, starting right where the Ethiopian was reading, Phillip the evangelist tells him about Jesus. He told him Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God who had come to earth. He died on a cross just as Isaiah had prophesied, but he didn’t stay dead. After three days, Jesus rose from the dead and is alive. Everyone who calls on the name of Jesus can be saved—Jesus changes everything.

The vast spectrum of the old laws of Moses have now been fulfilled—Jesus changed it all when he rose from the dead and now everyone can be saved. Although Phillip started in Isaiah 53, I don’t think he ended there. I think he continued to talk to this Ethiopian eunuch while he took him through several more chapters of Isaiah, talking about Jesus the whole time. I think he kept talking until he got to Isaiah 56 where there is a beautiful prophecy that was given looking forward into the time when the Messiah would come. I think that Phillip the evangelist read this prophecy to the Ethiopian. When the Ethiopian heard it, he began to shout because he knew this prophecy was meant for him. “Let no foreigner who is bound himself to the Lord say, ‘The Lord will surely exclude me from His people.’ And let no eunuch complain ‘I am only a dry tree’” (Isaiah 56:3).

Isaiah explains that there will be a time when no foreigner will be excluded. And, that passage goes on to say, “For this is what the Lord says: ‘To the eunuchs who keep my Sabbaths, who choose what pleases me and hold fast to my covenant—to

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

them I will give within my temple and its walls a memorial and a name better than sons and daughters; I will give them an everlasting name that will endure forever. And foreigners who bind themselves to the Lord to minister to him, to love the name of the Lord, and to be his servants, all who keep the Sabbath without desecrating it and who hold fast to my covenant—these I will bring to my holy mountain and give them joy in my house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be accepted on my altar; for my house will be called a house of prayer for all nations” (Isaiah 56:4-7).

So, we see in Deuteronomy 23 that foreigners and eunuchs are forbidden to enter the temple of God. But in Isaiah 56, it says that foreigners and eunuchs will be welcomed into the House of God because of what the Messiah does. In Deuteronomy chapter 23, if you are imperfect in any way you are forbidden from worshiping God. But in Isaiah 56, there is a place for everyone, even those who are imperfect. What triggers this change between Deuteronomy 23, where eunuchs and foreigners are kept out of the Temple, and Isaiah 56, when God’s House becomes a House of Prayer for all nations? That change is Jesus! The Messiah came to earth, paid the price for sin, and Jesus offers life to all who are imperfect. Those who don’t live up to the standards of society—everyone who doesn’t quite fit in. Jesus comes to those people and says, “There is a place for you. There is something that you can do for my Kingdom. You can come into the House of God.” Jesus throws open the door to every person, to those who are imperfect, to the eunuch, to those who are foreigners who were not born Jews. Jesus opens the door so that all can come into the House of God.

Phillip, the evangelist, told the Ethiopian eunuch that Jesus, is the one who changes everything. According to the law, many are excluded—but according to Jesus all are included. The law keeps people away from God, but Jesus brings people close to God. The law puts restrictions on people, but Jesus removes all the barriers. Under the law, the eunuch’s flaw prevented him from entering into a full relationship with God. But according to this story that Luke tells in Acts, the gospel can reach to all places and can impact the lives of all people, even those who were imperfect under the New Covenant. This is good news for every sinner, for every person who’s imperfect. Actually, the Bible tells us that it applies to all

## WHAT IS AN EVANGELIST?

of us. We are all sinners and all of us have imperfections, but because of Jesus, there is a place for us in the House of God.

When the Ethiopian heard this good news, he stopped the chariot! He says is there anything holding me back from being baptized? Why shouldn't I be baptized? What he's really asking Phillip is if there is any reason why he would be prevented from having a relationship with God. Phillip's response is, "No! There's nothing holding you back" (Acts 8:36). Then he gave orders to stop the chariot. We can imagine what that looked like. "Stop the chariot! Right now! Look! Here's some water." "Then both Phillip and the eunuch went down into the water and Phillip baptized him. When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away, and the Eunuch did not see him again but went on his way rejoicing. Phillip, however, appeared at Azotus and travelled about preaching the gospel in all the towns until he reached Caesarea" (Acts 8:38-40).

This is the impact that the gospel has on the life of one man—this Ethiopian eunuch and it happened because Phillip the evangelist was obedient to go into the desert to share the gospel with him. History records that this Ethiopian went back to his country and shared the gospel. To this day, the Ethiopian Orthodox Church traces their spiritual heritage back to this same Ethiopian eunuch. I've been to Ethiopia, and I have preached to 50,000 people at a time in this remarkable nation. The book of Psalms says, "Ethiopia will quickly stretch out her hands to God" (Psalm 68:31 NASB). We've seen that over and over. The people of Ethiopia are open to God because this evangelist named Phillip was obedient to the voice of the Holy Spirit.

I want to encourage you as an evangelist to be ready to preach to the multitudes. But also, be ready to preach to an individual. Obey the Holy Spirit. Look for opportunities to share the gospel and God will give your ministry great fruit.



# ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

Daniel Kolenda

## SYNOPSIS

Are you an evangelist? What is the evangelist called to do? Why has God given the gift of the evangelist to the body of Christ? Daniel Kolenda answers these questions and more about those who are gifted by God with the ability to lead people to Jesus.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Daniel Kolenda is a missionary evangelist, who has led more than 22-million people to Christ face-to-face through massive open-air evangelistic campaigns in some of the most dangerous, difficult, and remote locations on earth. As the successor to world-renowned evangelist, Reinhard Bonnke, Daniel is the president and CEO of Christ for All Nations (CfaN). A ministry which has conducted some of the largest evangelistic events in history, CfaN has published over 190 million books in 104 languages and has offices in some 14 nations around the world. He also hosts an internationally syndicated television program and has authored eight books including the bestsellers, “Live Before You Die,” and “Slaying Dragons.”

For more info, visit: <https://cfan.org>





## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

**P**reachers sometimes throw around certain terminology and assume that everyone has the same understanding. Because of that, as we address the gift of the evangelist, let's clarify what is meant by the word "gift." The word gift is a common metaphor that translates into many different languages. For example, I might say LeBron James is a gifted athlete, or so-and-so is a gifted preacher, or someone else is a gifted piano player or singer. But when I talk about the gift of the evangelist, the apostle, the prophet, the pastor or teacher, many of you who are students of the Bible will understand immediately that I'm referring to specific scriptures in the book of Ephesians.

"And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ" (Ephesians 4:11-13 KJV).

The gift of the evangelist is just one of the five, or as you'll see later, four gifts that the Scriptures mention in this passage. What's more, this particular subject is vital in discovering the call and purpose of God for your life. This means that it is also one of the keys for living a happy, fulfilled, and fruitful life. It's going to help you understand why you are good at some things, and not others. It will also show you why unity in the body of Christ is so important.

I am a preacher's kid. My father, my grandfather, my great grandfather, and five generations on my father's side were all pastors. My mother's father was a pastor. My wife's father was also a pastor. So you can see that I've been thoroughly "pastor-ized." Many of my childhood memories are of the church. I can remember being confused by the words of some of the songs that the adults used to sing. For example, one song was called "Bringing in the Sheaves." Of course, the lyrics were about sheaves of wheat at harvest time. But I had never heard of a sheave and thought we were singing about bringing in the sheeps. I was confused because I wondered why we were bringing sheeps in and where we would get them. It wasn't until many years later that I realized the word "sheeps"

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

wasn't correct. The mind of a child can easily be confused by some of these adult themes.

There was another song we sang whenever missionaries would come. I was raised in an Assembly of God church and, in the past, once or twice a month, missionaries would come through and would share their stories of hardships on the mission field. They would often do a slide presentation. I don't know if you're old enough to remember this, but it was before the days of digital editing. Instead, the missionary would place a negative into a slide projector and we would see the pictures on a stand-alone screen, followed by their stories describing their experiences.

Of course, these missionaries were looking for an offering. So, it was in their interest to paint the bleakest picture of the mission field possible to elicit the most amount of compassion and pity from their audience. I remember hearing the stories of all the toils, struggles, and tribulations which were further intensified by the pictures of the most miserable living conditions. And then, we would sing songs with lyrics like this, "Jesus use me; Oh, Lord, don't refuse me. Maybe there's a work that I must do. And even if it's humble; help my will to crumble, though the cost be great. I'll work for you."

There's nothing wrong with those lyrics in and of themselves—in fact, they are wonderful words! But there was something about the combination of the context and the melancholy music that embedded a young impressionable mind with the idea that God's will was going to be something very difficult, and require great sacrifice and suffering. I just knew that whatever God called me to do... it was going to be terrible.

I felt called to the mission field as a young boy of seven or eight-years-old. If you asked me, "What are you going to be when you grow up?" I would have answered, "I'm going to be a missionary in Africa." But I would say that in spite of the full knowledge that it was going to be absolutely terrible. What most people didn't realize is that I was terrified of the proposition.

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

I have since learned that many people are actually afraid to discover God's will for their life because they are worried that God might call them to do something that they don't want to do. They're worried that maybe God will call them to do something in which they do not feel equipped. They're worried that maybe following the call of God means they have to surrender their hopes and their dreams.

I remember one time I was preaching at a Bible school in the United States. On my way out, a very distraught student stopped me in the foyer. "I'm in my last semester here," he stammered. "I'm about to graduate and in a couple of weeks, I'm going to have to leave this place and go out into the world but I have no idea what I'm supposed to do with my life!" I've run into many people over the years, especially in Bible school, that have the same dilemma as they approach graduation. They know they have to go, but they're not sure where to go, or what to do.

This same student asked, "Can you pray for me? Can you help me?" We were standing in this long hallway next to a lamp. I noticed that the lamp had been unplugged from the wall. And the plug was just sitting there on the ground. Suddenly, I felt like the Holy Spirit gave me an idea specifically for this young man. So, I said to him, "Do you see that plug on the ground? Do you think if you had never seen a plug or an outlet before, you could figure out that they were made to go together?"

"Yeah, I think I would put that together," he replied, it's obvious they fit together." I went on, "This is one of those same things. God's calling on your life is something that was custom made for you and you were custom made for it."

Just like that plug and socket were made to go together, whatever God calls you to do, He custom designed you for the task. This is one of the key ways you can know what God wants from your life. Where do you fit? What do you enjoy? What brings you delight and satisfaction? Of course, let me give you a word of caution here, if you're not born again then your desires and the things that bring you delighted satisfaction are unredeemed—you can't let that drive you!

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

But once we're born again, not just our spirit, but our desires, our motives, and everything we are becomes sanctified. So, if you have a desire in your heart to do mission's work, the devil didn't put that in you—it is from the Lord. Often, as people teach about God's will, they emphasize the hardship, difficulty, and the sacrifice. Of course, on some level, that is absolutely true, this life can be difficult.

What I've learned, however, is that the most effective people in any ministry, or secular occupation for that matter, are not the people who are forcing themselves to do dreadful tasks because they think it's God's will. Instead, the ones that enjoy what they're doing so much that they feel guilty about taking a salary are the most effective—that's the way I feel. Today, I'm an evangelist and a missionary, but remember, I thought it was going to be a dreadful task.

I enjoy what I do so much, I don't even feel like I have a job. This doesn't mean that obedience and death-to-self are not necessary—they are! But here's the thing, when a person is doing what they are created to do, there is a taste of sweetness in the sacrifice, there is a sense of fulfillment in the obedience, and there is an enduring hope even in the midst of suffering. This is why James goes as far as to say, "Consider it pure joy, my brothers and sisters, whenever you face trials of many kinds," (James 1:2). How is it possible to have joy in that situation? Because when you are in God's will, there is an unexplainable grace that accompanies us.

Let me show you something amazing about grace. In Ephesians 4:11, Paul talks about the gift of the evangelist, along with the apostle, prophet, pastor and teacher. These are the five, (or four depending on your view), that are listed here. These are not the only gifts, but they are the ones addressed in this chapter. Ephesians 4:8 tells us that these are not just random things that happen to people. It quotes Psalm 68:18, a prophetic verse, noting that "...When He ascended on high, He led captivity captive, And gave gifts to men" (NKJV). These gifts are from Christ given to His church.

Jesus, "When He ascended on high, He led captivity captive." That's when the Lord gave these gifts to men. In Ephesians 4:12, we see why these callings were

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

given, “to equip his people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up.” And then, Ephesians 4:13 assures us of what these callings will ultimately accomplish in the church. It says, “till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ” (NKJV). These gifts are given to bring us into a state of being able to perfectly reflect the ministry, the character, and the expression of Christ in the world. That’s almost too much to take in. But this is what the Bible says.

We all want to be like Jesus and are supposed to be modeling ourselves after Him, growing in that aspect. I can remember when I was a boy, there was a Christian fad. We all had bracelets that said WWJD. It stood for “What Would Jesus Do?” Of course, that is what we should be seeking to do—imitate and to emulate Christ. But it’s important to know that none of us are ever going to perfectly reflect the nature, the character, the power, and the attributes of Christ.

We are all imperfect expressions of Jesus as individuals. I’ve had people challenge me on this and say, “That’s what we’re called to do.” But I’m saying this right now for a very good reason; notice I said that you wouldn’t be able to do this as an individual. Why? Because if you could be Jesus as an individual, then you wouldn’t need the body of Christ—you would be the full expression of Jesus.

But God’s intended design for the body of Christ is that we would need one another. We would have to work together. And as a collective body, as a group, as a family, not only can we attain to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ, but we will, as it says, right there in Ephesians. However, in order to reach this position of the fullness of the stature that God has given, it requires a variety of expressions of different ministry gifts—the apostle, the prophet, the evangelist, the pastor and teacher. Notice that these five gifts were given to the church when Jesus ascended to heaven.

These gifts are actually five different expressions of Christ’s own ministry. For example, with the gift of the teacher, who is a better teacher than Jesus? In John 7:46 we read that when the Pharisees sent soldiers to arrest Jesus, they came back

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

empty handed. And when the religious leaders asked why, the guards replied, “No one ever spoke the way this man does.” Jesus was known as a rabbi, which means a teacher. So great was His teaching that Matthew 7:28 stresses, “When Jesus had finished saying these things, the crowds were amazed at his teaching.” Matthew 7:29 goes on to explain, “...because he taught as one who had authority, and not as their teachers of the law.”

The scribes were considered the spiritual authorities. They were the experts on what was written in the law of Moses. But this verse points out that Jesus spoke as one who had authority in contrast to authority of the scribes, so much so that Jesus’s words showed the scribes’ lack of genuine authority. That challenged me! As I studied, I realized that the root word of authority is the word “author.” When Jesus spoke, He was not just regurgitating what other people had written. He was the author of the words He used when He taught. Remember, the job of the scribes was to copy what others had written. They were the photocopy machines of the ancient world. But when Jesus came, He was the author of life, and the author of the teaching, and as their source, His words astonished the people. Because of this, Jesus is the greatest teacher who ever lived.

Jesus was also the greatest prophet who ever lived. At the Mount of Transfiguration when Elijah and Moses appeared with Jesus on the mountain, a voice was heard from heaven. The Father said, “This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased. Listen to him” (Matthew 17:5)! In other words, God told two of the most powerful and influential prophets of the Old Testament, you need to be quiet and listen to my Son. In fact, Hebrews 1:2, tells us that in these days, God is always speaking to us by His Son. So, Jesus is both the greatest teacher and the greatest prophet.

The greatest apostle who ever lived was also Jesus—He is the apostle and high priest of our confession. Ephesians 2:20 reads, “...built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being the cornerstone” (ESV). Jesus is the apostolic cornerstone of the church. But let’s not forget that Jesus Himself said that He was the good shepherd who lays down His life for the sheep (John 10:11). That makes Him the greatest pastor who ever lived. You get the picture,

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

right? And of course, He was the greatest evangelist. He didn't just come from one country to evangelize a different nation—He came from heaven to earth. All five of these gifts are different expressions of the very ministry of Christ.

When Jesus rose from the dead, He desired that His ministry would continue on the earth. Rather than give His entire ministry to one person like some traditions teach, He broke it up into fifths and distributed it among the body. There is no one individual that possesses the full expression of the ministry of Christ. Why would He do this? Because His design was such that if we are ever going to fully express the ministry of Christ on the Earth, we are going to have to work together.

Many of you are evangelists—the truth is you need pastors. Some of you are pastors—you need the apostle. If you have an apostolic gifting, guess what, you need the prophet. We all need one another.

With that in mind, let's back up to Ephesians 4:7, "But to each one of us grace was given according to the measure of Christ's gift" (NKJV). This is the crux of what I am sharing—grace comes with the gift. Again, Jesus is the fullest expression of all of these different ministry gifts, but when He ascended on high and distributed these gifts to His church, not only did He give the calling, the responsibility, and the mandate, but He also gave the power to make those gifts operate.

Remember when you received gifts for your birthday or Christmas as a child? You were so excited that you couldn't wait to see what was inside. You might have ripped through the wrapping paper and pulled out a radio-controlled car. You wanted to play with it right away until you realized the batteries were not included.

Jesus is the perfect gift giver, however! Whenever He gives a gift, He always includes the batteries—the empowerment for the gift. It's called grace. This kind of grace does not mean unmerited favor as when Paul says, "For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith" (Ephesians 2:8). This grace is supernatural empowerment that enables you to do the thing that God has called you to do.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

When you realize this secret, you understand that if God has called you, He has also imparted to you the power to do the job. And you'll begin to realize that what seems impossible for others is very possible for you.

If you have the gift and grace, you can do it and it may even seem effortless to you...natural. If you don't have the gift and grace, you will always find yourself battling uphill and worn out. You might even begin to dread ministry. If you're young and new in ministry, you might not be able to imagine a scenario where you would actually dread ministry, but believe me, it's possible. If you find yourself engaged in something that God didn't call you to, it will make you miserable.

I hear a lot of preachers talking about burnout these days. And though there are different reasons this happens, I see a pattern that is altogether familiar. Imagine you've got a pastor who has a pure pastoral gift. He has one fifth of the gift and grace that is needed, but he's pouring out a hundred percent of what he has day and night. He gives himself relentlessly to this call. Yet eighty percent of what the church needs is not being met. He doesn't understand why this is happening and tries to just work harder, but it never seems to make a difference...

My friend, listen to me. If you had an airplane and it lost all but twenty percent of its engines, the pilot would bring that airplane in for an emergency landing. If your body lost eighty percent of its faculties, you would be in the emergency room on life support. If you had a business that lost eighty percent of its income, you would be filing for bankruptcy. Yet, in the church world, we have people who think they can do eighty percent or one hundred percent of what needs to be done with twenty percent of the gift and the grace. *That is a formula for burnout!*

So, here's the question, what should you do if you don't have one hundred percent of what the church needs? You partner with other people that have what you lack, a principle Paul shows us in 1 Corinthians 1:4-7, "I always thank my God for you because of his grace given you in Christ Jesus. For in him you have been enriched in every way—with all kinds of speech and with all knowledge—God thus confirming our testimony about Christ among you. Therefore you do not lack any spiritual gift as you eagerly wait for our Lord Jesus Christ to be revealed."

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

Paul is speaking to people who partnered with him on a financial level. He tells them that because they had partnered with him, they were actually able to tap into the grace that was on his life. Could this understanding not revolutionize the way you look at ministry.

You are never going to have one hundred percent of what the world needs in expressing Jesus. Still, we are called to represent Jesus on earth. How do we do this? We do it by working together. When you work with me, you tap into the grace that's on my life. When I work with you, I tap into the grace on your life. We now are able to succeed where we would not have been able to enjoy such success on our own.

We must understand that the evangelist is just one of the gifts. Consequently, whatever our ministry is, we cannot fulfill it on our own—we need one another. This truth is not only for those called into full-time ministry, but every one of us have been given a gift (Ephesians 4:7). Additionally, there is a grace that accompanies every gift enabling us to steward the gift we have been given because it is important to all of us—we need your gift.

When you're gifted in something, it is so easy for you that you often don't realize other people can't do what you do. Other people would wear themselves out trying to walk in your gift and calling. They need your gift and guess what—you need their gift as well.

The Bible says that every one of us have received a gift from Christ—and the grace appropriate for the gift. But, if you don't have a specific gift, then you won't have the grace for it. The principle, (if you can call it that), is simple, really, you cannot give something you don't have. And if you try to operate in something you don't have, you will discover that not only will it be difficult, but it could also actually hurt you. In fact, it might even destroy you.

Let me give you an example. 1 Corinthians 7:7 tells us that Paul had a gift of celibacy, sometimes referred to as “singleness.” Listen to what he says about it, “I wish that all of you were as I am. But each of you has your own gift from God; one has this gift, another has that.” Paul had a calling to remain single; a

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

calling that was accompanied by the grace for it. And he went so far to say that he wished everyone were like him. But I can tell you for sure that it's not God's will for everyone to be single, if it were, the whole human race would come to an end. God has designed men for women and women for men regardless of the spin job the prevailing cultural undertow uses to weaponize a cultural drift hostile to God's design of marriage nowadays. Paul, however, had the wisdom to recognize that his desire to remain single was a gift from God and that God had empowered him to live it out.

In 1 Timothy 4:3, Paul also instructs the church not to forbid marriage. This has proven troublesome and even deeply disturbing in certain segments of the church where marriage is forbidden. For example, priests have wound up in painfully scandalous situations. Why is this happening? Because people are being forced into remaining single in order to prove their devotion, but they have neither the gift nor the grace to do so. That is a formula for disaster! Paul's singleness was a gift, and with that gift, God had given him the grace to walk in it. But without that grace, rest assured, Paul would have seen his singleness as a great burden and it would have made him miserable.

There are two lessons we need to take away from Paul's singleness. First, don't make the mistake of forcing everyone around you to do what God has called you to do. And don't look down on them for doing something other than what you think is important. Recognize that *each has his own special gift from God, "one has this gift, another has that."* And here's the second thing, if you think that everybody around you should be doing some particular thing, chances are that's what God has called you to do. If you want to know what God is calling you to do, ask yourself this question: *What do you think everybody else should be doing?* When something seems obvious and natural, it is often a sign that the gift is upon your life, and you have special grace for it.

It's interesting, that as a boy, I dreaded the thought of being sent to the Third World or the jungle but today I often go to the Third World to preach the gospel. I don't know anything that I would rather do. I love my calling as a missionary evangelist and what I had not taken into consideration as a boy listening to those

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

missionary songs, was that there was both a gift and a grace that would make all the difference.

With that principle I mind, let's check the rearview mirror and look back at Ephesians 4:11 and the five-fold ministry gifts. That is common terminology in Pentecostal circles. However, the office of the apostle, and to a lesser extent, the office of the prophet are two gifts that are somewhat controversial. Some denominational circles teach that the gift of the apostle was only for the first century church and that after the death of the original apostles, the gift passed away.

But actually, this is a very indefensible doctrinal position. Without expounding on this at great length, let's look at a few facts. None of us believe that we can add to the Bible. The body of Scripture that we have today, which is commonly known as the Canon, is closed. It is forever settled in heaven. It is authoritative, it is inspired, and it is the eternal Word of God. And as believers we all honor it as such. This needs to be clarified because some argue for the cessation of the apostolic and the prophetic gift. They believe the primary role of the apostles was to write Scripture and if the apostolic was still operational today, then those apostles would be able to add to the closed Canon of the New Testament.

That is absolutely not the case and the argument is faulty in and of itself. First of all, most of the apostles did not write Scripture in the New Testament and almost half of the New Testament was penned by people who were not apostles—people like Mark and Luke. Nowhere does it state, or even imply, that the role of the apostle was to write Scripture. Inferring this idea and floating it as a doctrine is a circumstantial stretch at best.

On the contrary, Ephesians 4:12 tells us exactly what the apostolic gift, along with the other offices are for—the building up of the body of Christ. And because that role is still needed it only makes sense that the gift is still given. Also, the Bible never limits the gift of the apostle to the original twelve disciples, nor does it limit apostleship to the original twelve *plus Paul*.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

In fact, the Bible never defines the role of an apostle there is no job description or definitive set of criteria for judging who is and who is not an apostle. I mention this because some say there are several explicit requirements in order to be recognized as an apostle. For example, some interpret Scripture to mandate that an apostle had to have seen the resurrected Christ in bodily form.

Sadly, this is just not true. In fact, it's sloppy exegesis of what the text says. Because Paul emphasizes that Jesus gave these gifts to the church, it is impossible to separate these different ministry gifts. Either all the gifts are obsolete or none of them are obsolete. If apostles and prophets are obsolete, then so are pastors and teachers. On the flip side, if pastors and teachers are still relevant, then so are apostles and prophets. This passage of Scripture is not theological buffet. You can't just pick and choose what you want.

Bible scholar John Ruffin is quoted as saying, "The implication of the Ephesian metaphor for cessation hangs on the use of 'he gave' as an aorist tense in Verse 11. This is a singular, punctilious act, as some would say, the aorist tense applies. If so, this would argue for the uniqueness and cessation of the apostles and prophets, but it would also require the cessation of the other categories of ministry—evangelists, pastors, and teachers, since they are all placed in parallel construction and are all characterized by the accusative plural endings. If the giving of these gifted people to the church is an ongoing process, then similarly there's no exegetical warrant for artificially dividing these ministries into categories of extraordinary and ordinary, suggesting that one group is no longer given by the victorious Lord, but that the other continues. Exegetically, the gifts continue or cease as a single group."

Are pastors for today? Are teachers for today? Then let's briefly look at a few practicalities of an apostle. They're often pioneers and visionaries who God gives wisdom for building. They're often invested with an authority that comes from their work rather than from some institutional hierarchy like a denomination. Their ministries are frequently marked by supernatural signs, wonders, and miracles. Their lives are marked by humility and a servant's heart—even suffering,

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?**

according to the New Testament. And in the most practical sense, you'll often see apostles leading movements that they themselves started or helped to start.

Since Paul often puts prophets and apostles together in the same breath, I believe it is correct to think of the office of the prophet as a foundational revelation gift. Clarification is important. Just because somebody prophesies that doesn't make them a prophet. A true prophet is going to carry an authority that comes from the fruit of their ministry. In fact, in my experience, the prophet doesn't get that office by being appointed to it. They come to it over time as people recognize that they carry the Word of the Lord in a very special and specific way.

Let's go on to the pastor and teacher. These last two are probably the most commonly understood of all the gifts. In fact, the Greek actually puts these together as one gift. It may be most accurate to hyphenate them into a single word like pastor-teacher. But for the sake of this discussion, let's dissect them from one another, keeping in mind that these gifts function together. The word pastor means shepherd. The idea is probably equivalent to what the Bible describes as an overseer or an elder. And then, of course, teachers teach—that's pretty simple. But when you combine the idea of a pastor with the idea of a teacher, then you get the picture of one who studies and applies the Scriptures to the life of a congregation for the sake of providing spiritual care.

These five or four, combining the last two gifts and adding the evangelist, seem to be less like functional abilities and more like offices that come with a certain quality of spiritual authority. This resolves what would otherwise be confusing. It's obvious that the functional aspects of some of these gifts overlap. For example, the apostolic gift certainly requires some level of teaching, evangelism, and probably prophesying and pastoring. Yet, Paul says that these gifts are being distributed. That is to say that no one person has them all. Again, there are some who are apostolic who can prophesy, teach, pastor, and so on. But what Paul is actually talking about here is not just the ability to operate in these different ways but walking in an actual office that comes with the appropriate authority.

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

What that means is that a pastor can prophesy, but that doesn't make him a prophet. A prophet can teach, but that doesn't make him a teacher. Even if somebody is used by God in every one of these offices at some point in their lives, it still seems to me that a person can only fully function in one of these offices at a time. In a practical sense, I don't know how someone could adequately function in more than one because they are consuming. If you operate as an apostle, you're going to be exploding with vision and a desire to build, to enter, to plant, and to plow new ground. Thus, teaching for its own sake would feel absolutely unfulfilling and boring.

On the other hand, if you're a teacher, you're going to be investing an enormous amount of time and energy studying and preparing to teach and to preach. If you do it correctly, it is a full-time job. You could say the same thing for every one of these five-fold offices. That's why I'm telling you that in the context of Ephesians, Chapter 4, I believe what Paul's talking about here is in office.

I know you must be wondering why I didn't address the office of the evangelist. That is because now that we have laid out this context, we will devote the second half of this chapter to this office. The evangelist is foundational in keeping the church on point pertaining to its mission as we will see.

## **THE GIFT OF THE EVANGELIST**

In the first part of this chapter, we looked at the five-fold ministry gifts in Ephesians 4:11. We learned that every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ within us. We talked about what that means and explained that grace comes with the gift.

I highlighted the apostle, the prophet, the teacher, and the pastor, but I specifically left out the evangelist. We will dedicate the rest of this chapter on the office of the evangelist. I'm going to do this from the perspective of someone who is an evangelist. This is important because if you heard this from a teacher, a prophet, or from an apostle, you'd get a completely different kind of a presentation.

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

I'm the successor to a very famous evangelist. His name is Reinhard Bonnke. Under his leadership at Christ for all Nations, we saw more than eighty-million documented decisions for Christ. These are people who attended our crusades and heard the gospel. They prayed with a counselor, filled out the decision card, and then they were connected with local churches to be discipled. This last point is very important to us because the Bible doesn't say go and make converts. It says go and make disciples.

So, as I write, I'm keeping in my mind the fact that some of you are not called into the five-fold evangelistic office. In doing so, I will come from the perspective of an evangelist to help you elevate your own evangelistic efforts. Whether you're called into the office of the evangelist or not, *everyone is called to evangelize*.

We're all called to share the gospel with our friends, with our neighbors, and our world. Whatever you can learn from an evangelist that will make you a more effective soul winner, the better. In fact, when Paul talks about the gifts in Ephesians 4, he teaches that they were given for the equipping of the saints, for the work of the ministry, and for the edifying of the body of Christ. So, my job as an evangelist is not simply to do the work of an evangelist. My job is to equip you, no matter you're calling, to also do the work of the evangelist.

A number of years ago, I was in Lusaka, Zambia. It was either the third or fourth night of our gospel crusade, somewhere near the end. Suddenly, the top-most influential bishop in the region rushed over to me. I could tell that he was about to burst. He had something he wanted to say. It was a bit of an intrusion because it was during worship, but he was adamant about telling me. He said, "Evangelist Kolenda, in this crusade this week, I had a revelation." Now remember, we're standing on a platform in front of hundreds of thousands of people. It looked like he had come to this crusade, and that was awesome. He said, "I suddenly realized that we have honored the gift of the pastor. We have honored the gift of the prophet. And we have honored the gift of the pastor and the teacher. But we have forgotten about the gift of the evangelist. This week, in this crusade, I have had the revelation that we need the gift of the evangelist in our churches again."



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

What was revealed to the bishop was a vision of God bringing the office of evangelist back to the body of Christ as a whole. There have been some outstanding evangelists over the last one-hundred years—men like Billy Graham, Reinhard Bonnke, my mentor, and T. L. Osborn.

There have been a few others, but in general, the gift of the evangelist has been relegated to a relatively small number of very high-profile ministries. In these last days, I believe it's God's desire to distribute that gift of the evangelist to thousands, maybe hundreds of thousands, maybe even millions of people who will bring in this great end-time harvest.

Evangelist Bonnke used to tell me many times, and he found this quite amusing, that when he was in Bible college, the term evangelist was reserved for people who failed their theological exams. If you passed, then you got the title of pastor, but if you failed, then you were called an evangelist. Even today, many pastors, if they're honest with you, will tell you they really don't see the need for evangelists.

Many of them have experienced terrible things when some evangelists ministered. They blew in, they blew up, then they blew out, and left the pastor with a mess on his hands. They've heard the horror stories. Many evangelists have a "scorched earth policy." They don't care what happens after as long as they have good meetings, or they're able to make their point. It's true, that in some cases, evangelists have caused problems within the church.

Some Pastors look at that and think, "I don't need those problems, I'm as good a preacher as any evangelist. I know the ABCs of the gospel and I can do what they do, maybe even better than they do it—I don't need them." But gleaning on from the lessons in the previous segment, the reality is this. If you are a pastor, you may be able to preach the gospel, but you will never be able to do the job of an evangelist the way an evangelist can. An evangelist is specifically gifted to do his assignment.

Additionally, there's another layer to this that I think is even more important. You see, a pastor may preach the gospel. He may get people saved. He may actually do a great job of that, but a pastor will reproduce other pastors. You teach what you

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

know, but you reproduce who you are. That's a principle of the law of nature that goes all the way back to the Garden of Eden. God said, from the very beginning, that each living thing would produce after its own kind. And to this day, one of the things we experience in the church is an overwhelming glut of pastors.

On the other side, there comparatively few true evangelists walking in their gifting. I believe God to be brilliant and a strategic genius, so, I can't imagine that God would fill the world with one gift to the exclusion of others—especially when one of the others is so desperately needed. Which inevitably leads me to believe that the problem most likely isn't God—it is probably us.

Consider, that as pastors preach, people sit in the seats and listen. And as they do, they begin to identify with the gift within that person and look to emulate them. If a person in the congregation is called to be an evangelist, they need to experience and connect with the ministry of a true evangelist. Otherwise, a famine of evangelists will occur because that is not what is being emulated from the leadership, causing a lack of spiritual reproduction.

It's important that we understand an evangelist is not just an evangelist because he preaches the gospel. There is a spiritual DNA that an evangelist carries. Wherever he goes, he deposits that DNA and reproduces after his own kind. This is also the case with all the other gifts. If you get around a real prophet, not just someone who prophesies, you will walk in more of the prophetic realm.

You'll suddenly start having dreams, seeing visions, hearing things, and becoming more keenly aware of the supernatural. When you get around people with a five-fold ministry gift, it's contagious and begins to rub off on you. I spent many years with Evangelist Bonnke and can confirm that his gift rubbed off on me.

Even though you are around people with a specific gift, the anointing that rubs off on you doesn't last forever unless God has called you to it. That being said, it is very important that we get people in the church around evangelists. One of the things God is doing right now is restoring the unique gift and grace of the evangelist to the church. Authentic evangelistic ministry has been so rare, and

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

there have been so few role models, that in many ways we need to reintroduce the church to the true evangelistic gift and calling.

The word evangelist literally means, “a proclaimer of the good news.” That is very much an appropriate description of who an evangelist is and what he or she does. An evangelist is someone who is called to proclaim the good news. I tell people all the time, “I have many sermons, but I only have one message—my message is the gospel.”

You might think that it’s boring to constantly be on the same theme, the same subject, over and over again. But actually, it’s the opposite—the more I preach the gospel, the more I fall in love with it. That’s because, the more I preach it, the more deeply I see into it and into the heart of God, thus, the more I’m overwhelmed by it. The gospel is an endless revelation and if you’re an evangelist, that will be your experience. You won’t be able to preach it enough. It’s also important to remember that the gift of the evangelist is more than a subject that is preached. The evangelist embodies the gift in his own character, in his unique personality—in the way that he’s wired.

In my observation, people who walk in the office of the evangelist have some very peculiar characteristics. They’re often quite eccentric personalities who are unique and often risk-takers. They tend to thrive on pioneering and don’t mind going into new places and confronting the unknown or the difficult situations that accompany it. Additionally, they’re not afraid of resistance and in fact, flourish in its challenges. I can tell you that in many situations, whether in a church or in the city preaching, I’ve often been met with a cold resistance. When I feel that resistance from the crowd, I don’t feel stifled or intimidated—instead, I actually feel a surge of energy rise up on the within me.

I’ve become my sharpest as an evangelist when I feel that resistance forcing itself against me. I believe this is characteristic of the evangelistic gift. Evangelists are often called by God to be the tip of the spear for the advancing of the gospel into a region and for the church as a whole. They often brandish a compelling anointing to gather and inspire people as well.

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

Wherever you see a true evangelist, crowds are going to follow. Jesus was the greatest evangelist that ever lived and wherever Jesus went, crowds followed. I believe that was partly because of the evangelistic gift upon Jesus's life. Not only do evangelists have the anointing to gather, but they are also just persuasive people by nature. In fact, I'd go as far as to say that evangelists are hardwired with such a persuasive demeanor, that if you find an evangelist who's not functioning in their calling, I guarantee you he or she will try to sell you something. An evangelist who is not in fulltime ministry is probably going to be a car salesman or running some business. He's going to be a highly persuasive, inspiring, charismatic person. None of these are absolutes. But these traits tend to be normal and commonplace in evangelists.

Virtually everything in life is somewhat of a two-edged sword, so, when it comes to a personality, or a gift, or a calling, there's also a negative side. I think it's both important and good, especially if you are called to be an evangelist, that you are made aware of the negative potential of that type of personality and that specific calling. On the negative side, evangelists sometimes have the tendency to be somewhat impetuous, impulsive, and sometimes harsh and abrasive. Those characteristics are needed when we are in tough environments, with tough people, and need to confront tough situations. But not every situation requires an abrasive or rough personality. We need to be careful that we're not being unnecessarily exacting with people. I have also found that evangelists tend to be less analytical and nuanced in the way that they think and more dogmatic. They see things in black and white, right and wrong, up and down—there's just no in-between.

Leaders are visionaries, and as such they need to believe without qualification in what they're saying and doing. They've got to be completely sold out—evangelists find that pretty easy. They aren't caught-up in nuance, but that can be a negative because sometimes they think too simplistic. That's why God brings other gifts around, like teachers, apostles, prophets and pastors. No matter the personality traits, ultimately a person who is an evangelist will be highly effective at bringing people to Christ.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

What are some of the things that make evangelists effective in bringing people to Christ? Much of the time it's the way that they think—it's the "paradigm." If you're not familiar with that term, a paradigm is the set of lenses through which you see the world. If you put on rose-colored glasses, suddenly the whole world looks red to you. Well, if you could put on evangelistic glasses, the whole world looks lost, and to you, the whole world looks like a stage. You would see a harvest field, evangelists see the world in that particular way.

This evangelistic paradigm is one of the keys to being successful in evangelism. Even if a believer doesn't have an evangelistic bone in their body, if I can help them see the world through the evangelist's eyes, they can become an effective soul winner. Years ago, when I was a boy, I was very interested in learning how to play the piano. Once in a while, at church, I would sit down and try to figure it out. I read books on it but couldn't grasp it, it was just too complex. I desperately wanted to take piano lessons, but my parents couldn't afford to send me. Eventually, I found this guy who was a very good piano player and could teach and made a deal with him, "I can't pay you for teaching me how to play, but I promise I'll practice for three hours a day." I meant it and really would have put my heart and soul into it.

Unfortunately, it didn't work out, because he was just unable to do that for me. Eventually, however, a vocal coach strayed into my gravitational field. It wasn't the piano, but I wanted to have vocal training as well so, I brainstormed a pitch and said to this lady, "If you will give me voice lessons, I'll mow your lawn." She agreed and I mowed her lawn in exchange for vocal lessons for two or three years.

One day, during my voice lessons, she was helping me with vocal warm-ups on her piano and began playing chords and explain how they were constructed. As she described this to me, something clicked in my mind and suddenly, the entire keyboard became a pattern that I understood. I don't claim to be a great maestro, but I learned the keyboard from that day on, and in time, was able to play well enough to become a worship leader who led from behind the piano. I can trace that ability back to the moment when something switched on in my brain, and

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

I saw the piano in a new way. It wasn't the piano that changed, it was the way I saw the keyboard.

It's the same with evangelism. If I can help you to look at it differently, I believe I can help you to be effective. First, instead of seeing yourself as a soul-winner, see yourself as a seed-planter. This will cause a mindset shift that changes the way you define success. Truthfully, the reason many people are not effective soul-winners is because they're afraid of rejection. If you're going to share Jesus with people, there are going to be times when you feel rejected. Being rejected is not failure—every Prophet and Jesus Himself faced rejection. Not getting an instantaneous conversion is also not failure. This is why it is important to see yourself as a seed planter, because whenever you sow a seed you will see that as success.

The terminology “soul-winner” comes from the Book of Proverbs. “He who wins souls is wise” (Proverbs 11:30 NKJV). However, this verse not talking about evangelism, but refers to persuasively winning someone over to your point of view. In the context of evangelism, when we preach the gospel, we're not going out to win. Instead, we're actually laying our lives down for those we're reaching and sometimes that means we lose so that the other person can win. When it's Christ through your witness, it's not you who wins, it's the other person and Jesus who wins. Our job is to sow seed!

We learn in the Parable of the Sower (Matthew 13:1-9), that the seed represents the Word of God. The Sower is the person who plants the seed and in the Scripture, Jesus, Himself, was the Sower. The soil represents the hearts of the people who hear the Word (the seed). When you preach the gospel and share your faith, you are casting seed into soil. Some of it will fall on good ground and some on stony, thorny ground. Still, some will get snatched away by the birds, just like it is stated in the parable. And then there is some that will inevitably get choked out by the trials and tribulations of life. But a portion of the seed will sink down into the soil, take root, grow, and bear fruit.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

This is why, if you think of yourself as a sower instead of a soul-winner, success is found in the sowing. We'd be naive if we didn't acknowledge that on some level, it's a numbers game. For example, if you share the gospel with one hundred people, you'll probably see more people come to Christ than if you share with ten. Your job is to cast the seed of the gospel as widely as you can. By doing so, you'll learn to define success as sowing.

I don't have to see conversions every time I share the gospel to do what God has called me to do. I just have to keep sowing. If you think you must win twenty people to the Lord every day, you're going to get frustrated and discouraged—and within the confines of reality, that's probably not going to happen anyway, at least for most people. However, if your goal is to share the love of Jesus with twenty people every day, you can do that! Day after day, you can be successful.

Secondly, it will make you less discriminating. Many times, people choose to share the gospel based on someone's outward appearance. For example, maybe you're on the subway and looking around at the other passengers, you see two people. One is a homeless old lady while the other is a guy with a shaved-bald head, tattoos, and earrings. He's wearing a cut-sleeve shirt with muscles sticking out, and he's six-foot-seven. You may think, "I don't want to talk to that guy. He looks scary. I'm going to go talk to the little old lady instead." But truthfully, you don't know what God is doing in the hearts of these two people.

Being prejudiced means to prejudice, and if we give ourselves to prejudice rather than God's love and gifting, it will cause us to miss the incredible fruit God is ready to harvest. But if you look at the Parable of the Sower, he just began to cast that seed indiscriminately on the ground. Some of it landed in a good place—some of it didn't. But the sower's job was not to discriminate; the sower's job was to sow the seed. The Bible tells us that man looks at the outward appearance, but God looks at the heart (1 Samuel 16:7). Jesus made all kinds of analogies about witnessing to people. He talked about wheat and tares, contrasted sheep and goats, and shared about casting a fishing net that gathered good and bad of fish—pick a parallel. But why did He do this? Because from a distance, wheat and tares look the same, sheep and goats look the same, and various kinds of fish

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?**

look the same. You can't always tell who is who based upon a snap judgment. That's why Jesus said don't make that judgment. Wait until the end and let the angels sort all of that out.

Finally, this mentality will protect you from frustration and discouragement. Again, the sower was not just any old sower, this was Jesus Himself. Most of the soil which the seed fell upon didn't produce any fruit. That's something to think about! Jesus Christ, the most perfect sower in history, went out sowing the most perfect seed (the Word of God) and still it only bore fruit a quarter of the time.

And the soil that did produce fruit had a varying degree of fruitfulness. Some produced thirty, some sixty, and some one hundred-fold. That's important for you to understand when you evangelize. You are not always going to get the result you want. But when you learn to see yourself as a seed sower, you will learn that the prize is in the sowing itself. That's where you will find yourself being successful.

Here's the next paradigm of an evangelist that will help shift your perspective. See yourself as a witness instead of a preacher. In Acts 1:8, Jesus said, "you will be my witnesses," a term we've often used to mean sharing our faith. It's become sort of a "Christianese" cliché. A case-in-point is when someone shares their faith with a person, we say "they were witnessing to them." But let's strip away the religious jargon and look at what the word witness really means. A witness is someone who has experienced something. In the most literal sense, a witness is someone who has seen something.

A person has witnessed something, and now they bear witness to what they saw, heard, or experienced. The word witness in the Scripture even has legal implications. In court cases in the ancient world, as it is today, a witness could be called to testify in a trial concerning what they heard or saw. The witness doesn't actually need to be an expert, most of the time a witness is an ordinary person. They don't need to be particularly well-spoken. They don't need to be highly-educated. They just need to have seen, heard, or experienced something. That itself qualifies them to recount it. In fact, sometimes the less expertise you



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

have, the more credible you are as a witness. It comes across more authentic and not contrived, without any preconceived ideas. Your testimony is just your experience.

In Acts 4:13, we read that Peter and John stood before the Sanhedrin. “When they saw the courage of Peter and John and realized that they were unschooled, ordinary men, they were astonished, and they took note that these men had been with Jesus.” Their lack of education worked to their advantage. The judges could see that they were unschooled ordinary men, and yet they spoke with conviction and boldness.

Often, people shy away from sharing the gospel because they don’t believe themselves to be qualified. Many think, “I am not a Bible school graduate, I haven’t taken a course in evangelism,” or “I’m not a preacher or particularly persuasive...” However, when believers begin to see themselves as witnesses instead of preachers, or debaters, or experts, then all the pressure falls away because they learn that they are not responsible to actually bring that person to the point of conversion.

That’s not our job, we can’t save anyone, only Jesus saves people. Only the Holy Spirit convicts of sin, righteousness, and judgment. With the pressure off, all that is needed is to share what you have experienced—what you have seen and heard.

There is also the element of bringing the simplicity of the gospel. That means communicating that Jesus died on the cross for our sins, that He rose from the dead, that if we will accept His free offer of salvation, we will be saved by grace, through faith. And that there’s nothing we can do to earn it, but that it’s God’s free gift.

As you begin to share these things, the Holy Spirit will begin to work with you. This is perhaps one of the most powerful revelations that you can have about evangelism. You are never alone when you share the gospel. The Holy Spirit lingers at the foot of the cross and when you preach the gospel, the Spirit rides in on that word and He begins to make Jesus known.

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?

Evangelist Bonnke used to preach on the fact that in the midst of chaos and of darkness, in the book of Genesis says that the Holy Spirit hovered over the face of the waters. He would ask the question, “What was He waiting for? He was waiting for the Word! When God said, ‘Let there be light, the Holy Spirit rode in on that Word and the result was transformation. Light from darkness, order from chaos, beauty from ashes. Everything came together when that Word met the Holy Spirit’s work.” Let that be an encouragement to you. When you share the gospel, you can have a deep, abiding confidence that the Holy Spirit works with you.

When you get into a taxicab, you are not there by accident, it’s a divine appointment. Not only is the Holy Spirit with you, but He has been working on that person’s heart for days, sometimes weeks, maybe even years. The Holy Spirit has been preparing that person for the moment that they meet you. This is how evangelists think, and this is why evangelists are effective. They know that as they encounter someone, “That person has been prepared for me and the Holy Spirit is with me. When I share the gospel with that person, the Holy Spirit will ride in on that. He will bring conviction and the presence of God. That person will fall on their knees and receive Jesus.” Again, it doesn’t always work that way, but I would rather err on the side of trust in God.

Once on a plane, Evangelist Bonnke had received a book from another evangelist. He had been asked to write an endorsement. He wanted me to read it and tell him what I thought. It wasn’t very long, and I had read the entire book on our flight. When I was finished, he asked, “What did you think?” It was about evangelism, and I thought it was fine. I liked it. But he said, “I’m not writing an endorsement for that book. The author left out the most important part of evangelism. He forgot the Master Evangelist—the Holy Spirit.” This person was not charismatic, and somehow, they had reduced the entire preaching of the gospel down to a formula.

No matter how skillful you become at presenting the gospel, no matter how convincing or persuasive you are as a person, you cannot save anyone. It is the presence and the power of the Holy Spirit that does that work.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I've learned this the hard way. You know, I've mentored students in evangelism, and tried to teach them different things. But when I heard them share the gospel, it was just awful. I felt embarrassed for them; I felt embarrassed for myself and I thought, "This guy didn't listen to me at all. He didn't get anything I taught him." But then to my surprise, the person with whom they were sharing the gospel was gloriously born again and filled with the Holy Spirit. Their life was transformed. I learned that maybe it's not because I do this better than someone else—all we need to do is create the open door for the Holy Spirit to work.

Remember, we are seed planters. We are to scatter the seed of the Word of God in different kinds of soil allowing it to bear fruit where it takes root. And we are to see ourselves as witnesses, not preachers. That helps us to know that even if we don't have the cleverest arguments, or we're not debaters, we can share what God has done in our lives with others.

This gives us a deep, abiding confidence that the Holy Spirit is with us, that He is working through us, and in the hearts and the minds of those to whom we are ministering. It builds our confidence that as we do our part sowing the seed of the gospel and testifying of what God has done in our life, that the Holy Spirit will take our offering and multiply it. Jesus took the loaves and fishes from the lunch of that little boy and the Holy Spirit will do the same with what we have. He will break it, bless it, multiply it, and distribute it far and wide. He will do far more with it than we could have ever done on our own.

Let me close with this nugget of wisdom about sharing your testimony. I listened to an interview recently given by a well-known radio talk show host. Most of you would recognize his name—he's not a Christian, he's an atheist, but he made this insightful statement. He said that people have tried to convert him to Christ many times. Then he said, "Every time someone tries to convert me to Christianity, they tell me a story of how they hit rock bottom. They were in jail or strung out on drugs. It was the absolute worst time of their life, but through that they found God. I'm not at rock bottom. I can't relate to that experience. I'm rich. I have a great job. I have a great family. I have a great life. I've never

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST?**

heard anything from a Christian that I found compelling. That's why I'm not. Christian."

This caused me to realize that sometimes, when it comes to our personal stories the very thing we think is insignificant, or not worth talking about, may be the very thing that someone else needs to hear. I'm the guy who grew up in the church. I don't have a story of being addicted to drugs, in a gang and killing people, or going to prison. I don't have that kind of drama-laden testimony. Some of you probably feel the same way. Maybe you question what you have to share that would be meaningful to people. Maybe you think your experiences are not that intense. My friend, your particular story may be exactly what another person needs to hear. Your witness about God is simply your experience with God. As you share that, the Holy Spirit will illuminate the mind of the person listening, convict them of sin, righteousness, and judgment; and draw them to the foot of the cross.

The truth is that God has an experience for all of His children that will enable you to be His witness on a whole different level. He will empower you to proclaim the gospel with power. You probably have heard Pentecostals teach on the baptism of the Holy Spirit. I don't want to get into doctrinal idiosyncrasies, however if you are saved, and if you put your faith in Christ, if you're a child of God, you have a right to receive and experience the in-filling of the Spirit. God wants to empower you for ministry.

Maybe you have already experienced fruit in the ministry entrusted to you, but if you've not received the baptism of the Holy Spirit, there's more. I'll even go so far as to say, even if you have been baptized in the Holy Spirit, there is still more. The same people who were filled with the Holy Spirit in Acts, Chapter 2, were filled again with the Holy Spirit in Acts, Chapter 4. It's not a "one and done" thing. It is an ongoing experience with God through the Holy Spirit. There are more facets to the depths and riches of God than you could ever imagine.

My friend, sow the seed of the Word of God in every heart. See yourself as a witness, not a preacher. And I encourage you to go after the empowerment of

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

the Spirit with all of your heart. By doing so, you will see great fruit and a great harvest in Jesus's name!

# THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

Ben Fitzgerald

## SYNOPSIS

In this article, Ben Fitzgerald paints a beautiful picture of God's heart toward humanity. He eloquently equips us to understand that evangelism is not a duty, it's a high privilege. How will people be reconciled back to God if we do not share the gospel? And who would keep such amazingly good news to themselves?

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Originally from Melbourne, Australia, Ben Fitzgerald met Jesus in an encounter that deeply changed him late in 2002 whilst he was broken and dealing drugs. Since then Ben has lived passionately about one thing: showing the world Jesus in everyday life and taking the good news of the Kingdom to the nations. For several years he served as a pastor at Bethel Church in Redding, California and is now the director of "Awakening Europe." He has a deep conviction that the nations of this earth will be transformed by radical believers living free and boldly proclaiming Jesus.

For more info, visit: <https://www.awakeningeurope.com/>



## THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

I firmly believe we need to raise up evangelists in this crucial hour. There is a reason why God wants evangelists in the world preaching the gospel and equipping the church to do the same. It's not just for the sake of fulfilling the calling of the evangelist, obviously, we know it's for souls. God loves people and it's His heart to see them brought back into relationship with Him. He loves us so much, that He became a man and died for us. We see in Genesis, at the beginning of His creation, that His plan was always to birth more people out of that love. Our Triune God is one, but with three distinct personalities. It's a mystery that eclipses human comprehension, but the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit have great love for one another. So, God created people in His image, however, that image, as we know, has been corrupted by sin.

In our generation, we see the progression of that sin dramatically intensifying. Certainly, as we know, every generation deals with sin, but sin has a malignant quality that causes it to grow. And as it grows, it causes more and more death and destruction, which is what we see in this generation. The escalating corruption and wickedness is right in our faces everywhere we turn, causing the need for the evangelist to become greater than I've ever seen in my 38 years of living.

I remember when I was a kid, there was still a respect for prayer that led people to pray. Godly principles operated in society and were respected, even by unbelievers. But sadly, one of the characteristics of our generation is that these righteous principles are being discarded out-of-hand. The enemy is working very hard in his own evangelistic campaign to get people into hell. Hopefully, we as the church in this generation can say that we worked harder to win people to King Jesus than the devil did to send people to hell.

But let's go back to where we started in Genesis and look at how God said, "Let us make mankind in our image, in our likeness (Genesis 1:26). Here is what God was saying in the vernacular, "Let's reproduce Ourselves in a man and have a relationship with mankind." God initiated this relationship. So, when we talk about raising up evangelists, we need to understand that God's heart is winning somebody to Himself because He longs for deep, meaningful relationship with men. And out of longing, the Father sowed His Son into the earth that He might



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

reap billions of people for Himself as His family just as John 3:16 testifies, “For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.”

We also see, in Revelation, Chapter 21, that believers will be fully reconciled back to God in His eternal presence. He desires His family to be with Him untainted by the enemy and sin—what a wonderful time that will be! So, you can see why the need for the evangelist isn’t just to fulfill a calling or a mission. The very core of evangelism is God’s extraordinary longing and love for every human being alive—we don’t want anyone to miss out on so great a salvation.

I bet you can remember the very moment that Jesus set you apart and called you by His grace to be part of His family, it was a time of intimate exchange. Truthfully, all of creation has been set up to evangelize—to be a reproducer. That’s the nature of an evangelist, someone who puts the hand of a person in the hand of God. Paul tells us in 2 Corinthians 5:20 that we’re ambassadors; that we implore people to be reconciled to God. That’s our calling and it’s such an honor to have that mandate.

Continuing our reflection of Genesis, God wanted a relationship with man and did everything to bring that about. He bankrupted heaven by sacrificing His most precious possession—Jesus, so that we could be brought into the family. We must realize we are not just doing the work of ministry, we are restoring the value of human life and it is the greatest work on earth.

Every single Christian is meant to be a witness, but sadly, this truth was lost for several hundred years. Now, thankfully, it is being established again and most believers feel like it’s their God given privilege, not duty, to share Jesus Christ with people. However, I want to specifically address those who are called to the office of the evangelist. The one who is called to go out, proclaim the good news, and come back into the fellowship and to share the heartbeat of the Father for humanity.

Romans 10:13 (NKJV) says, “Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.” It doesn’t matter who you were, where you’re from, or what you did—

## THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

Jesus paid for your sins, and He calls to you. I love that this verse highlights the fact that we call out to someone specific. It doesn't say whoever says, "Is there a God out there?" God is sovereign; He can certainly answer that question and Jesus knows very well how to reveal Himself. But this verse actually speaks of God's righteousness and how anyone who calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved.

The following verses are profound for us, "How then shall they call on Him in whom they have not believed? And how shall they believe in Him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach unless they are sent? As it is written: 'How beautiful are the feet of those who preach the gospel of peace, Who bring glad tidings of good things!' But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah says, 'Lord, who has believed our report?' So, then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God" (Romans 10:14-17 NKJV).

Although Paul tells us that anyone who calls on God's name can be saved, he put the emphasis back on us. He basically says, "How are they going to actually call? Whose number are they going to dial?" The dexterity of all the different faiths in the world is massive, so much so that it would take 20 years to compare each faith to the reality of Jesus. There are millions of demigods and different kinds of spiritualism in the world. This is why Paul reminds us that people need to know the number to call. They don't just need to know there's a God, they need to know His name is Jesus—but how are they going to know His name without a preacher telling them.

That's you! Without the person using his mouth, his body, and his hands as a vessel to proclaim the gospel, how will they ever know? Their ears need to be touched with the good news that you carry. "How beautiful are the feet of those who preach the gospel of peace, Who bring glad tidings of good things" (Romans 10:15b).

The gospel is made for reproduction. Psalm 19:4 says, "Yet their voice goes out into all the earth, their words to the ends of the world." In the heavens, God

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

has pitched a tent for the sun and He wants His gospel, His Kingdom, and His nature to be expressed to humanity. This is the longing of His heart, to have a relationship with mankind. This is made possible because all of our sins can be absolved through the blood of Jesus.

Think of it this way. How do you know someone wants to date you unless you hear from them with a text message or a phone call? Frankly, you can't walk up to every person and say, "Do you want to date me?" You need to communicate subtly and leave hints that you like the person you're interested in. God left us a big hint—He gave His only Son for us, and He sends people to share us the good news with us.

I saw a study recently in which they found only four percent of Christians lead people to Christ. That means ninety-six percent of people are happy with going to church. They're happy with their relationship with Christ. They would never give up their salvation, but they don't share that experience with those who don't know Jesus.

I've used this illustration before with thousands of people in the church, asking, "Who here, if I gave you half-a-billion-dollars, would give up their salvation? Put your hand up if you'd give it up for me." No one has ever put their hand up. But I follow that up with, "If it's the most important thing to you, then why have you not shared that same gift with your unsaved brother? What has happened in your heart?" I don't want to lay guilt on people, but why is it that ninety-six percent of Christians are satisfied with having Christ, yet they don't want to give Him away? They don't want to reproduce... Genesis tells us that God's heart for His people has always been to *be fruitful and multiply*—it's our bedrock purpose from our creation forward.

Sadly, we've sometimes taken the multiplication of God winning people to Himself through us out of the picture. We're happy to be adding the fruit of the Spirit to our lives, but we're not applying multiplication into the equation of our walk with the Lord. And if that's the case, how do we calculate the cost of subtracting it? That's why the need for the evangelists is so great. They go out

## THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

and preach the gospel, and as Isaiah 52:7 and Romans 10:15 tell us, their feet are beautiful. That's what I want—I want my feet to be the best-looking feet, catwalk model quality. Exceptional feet that have been walked flat to give the good news to people. I hope one day my wife says, “Honey, you have the best feet I've ever seen, they've been fully saturated in the good news of the gospel.”

How is it that we could be so satisfied with keeping the gospel to ourselves? That is why the call of the evangelist is so important. They don't only go out and preach the gospel to the lost, they also equip the church to do the same. They come back into the fold and share the heart of the Father for the lost. They share the truth that people matter to Him. You mattered to Him. Every person sitting in the chairs on Sunday mattered to Him. God personally anointed someone—maybe your mother who prayed for you; maybe a friend who pleaded with God for you to share how much you mattered to Him. He feels the same for every person on earth. And while it may be hard to grasp, our Lord loves a drunk laying in the gutter passed out in his vomit as much as He loves Billy Graham—He treasures both of them equally.

My team has been praying for a specific girl every Tuesday. We prayed, “Jesus, save her! Come into her life.” Recently, at a large meeting here in Germany, we watched her walk down to the altar with tears in her eyes. Her friends came with her, and she received the Lord Jesus Christ. Man, I lost it! The Holy Spirit said, “Ben, take this moment in. It's heaven's most precious, prized moment.”

The need for the evangelist is so great, not only because they go after those who are lost, but because they equip those whose hearts have become cold. I don't think anyone intentionally tries to be cold and we all want to see people saved. But sometimes we get satisfied with just knowing Jesus. We forget that it's a huge privilege to bring Him to other people, even if evangelism is not your calling card.

Every believer is a witness to what God is doing on the earth. The evangelist is simply the one who wakes people up to that reality. Yes, they bring the gospel to the world, and they have beautiful feet that reach those who've never heard. But

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

they also have the beautiful task of reaching the church to make sure we know how to witness this great news we've all received. So, the need for the evangelist is two-fold. We read in Ephesians 4:11 that the evangelist is called to equip the saints to actually do the work of service.

Just know that equipping doesn't come through guilt nor does it come through badgering people. It comes through simple ways of sharing Jesus with people such as giving people testimonies of what Jesus does in the lives of people He loves. That young girl who just gave her heart to the Lord in Germany, she's now our sister in Christ. Her life had been one struggle after another but now she has such a soft heart. She was looking for something and she wound up working in the office of a doctor who is my friend and a beautiful woman of God. She has such a big heart. Not only does she have a heart to heal people, but she has an even bigger heart for people to meet Jesus. She prays in her office and shares the love of God with people. And she began to share the love of God with this girl who now works in her office as her assistant. How would she have ever known that Jesus loved her if no one had told her.

The world is in absolute chaos, just look around. However, I'm thankful that the devil is overplaying his hand. And he is, big time—he's using the media to divide and alienate people and basically sectioning off humanity into different types of antagonistic categories. He's certainly the author of confusion and not even disguising it anymore. His lies are so glaringly evident, that people don't know what to believe! They are turning over every rock they can find to see what lies beneath it in their search for truth. And most of the time, whatever is under the rock that they turn over slithers out with a sardonic smile. Our generation is dog-tired of the rubbish—of being fed lie after lie after lie... They're tired of meditating on a mountain for three months and not finding the answers for their empty soul. They ache for something true; something real. People are actually more attracted to truth, making our job as evangelists easier.

Jesus will always win because He knows the needs of this generation. The devil's lies are not fulfilling them and people are dissatisfied. That's actually a prayer I pray all the time. I say, "God I pray for that person right now. I pray the world

## THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

would make him empty inside. I pray that he feels as though he has nothing.” Emptiness is a good thing because it causes us to search for truth.

It’s a blessing to have money in your bank account and a great family—those things are fantastic. But they don’t fill the empty places in the human soul. The call to preach the gospel is greater in this hour than it’s ever been before. Can you ever remember a time in history where people were committing suicide over a Facebook comment? This is terrible! This is not the heart of God. We need to get the gospel out to people with skin on it. We need to saturate Facebook and Instagram with the truth that God loves people. It needs to be all over the media (social and commercial) as well. It needs to crowd the airwaves on television; cable, streaming, and satellite venues need to be overflowing with truth. The gospel needs to be absolutely everywhere, and that, my friend, is your high call from God Himself.

Jesus did that exact thing and He’s the Chief Apostle, the *firstborn of many brethren*. He’s also the second Adam and He came to this earth as an evangelist. He came and said, “Let me show you the Father’s heart.” He didn’t think the Great Commission was a great suggestion, He could not help but share the love of God with people.

It’s not really that hard to be an evangelist, all you really need to do is talk about your Dad. Talk about your Father in heaven. Talk about how He changed your life—talk about the Lord Jesus, your High Priest, Apostle, and Big Brother in the Lord. Talk about how He set you free, remember, He’s the Lord of the universe but He’s also the Lord of your heart who gave you peace. It’s not difficult to share when you understand that you truly have the most loving news of all to give to every single person you meet.

The Father must grieve deeply every time one person takes a life. He must lament over the hollow onslaught of absurd, superficial Facebook comments. These kinds of things show us the emptiness and desolation of soul we encounter, that’s why your call is so important. I love this quote by British missionary C.T. Studd, “Some want to live within the sound of church or chapel bell; I want to run a

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

rescue shop, within a yard of hell.” Some people want to live comfortably and hear the bells ring. Others say, “No! I can’t take the bells. I want to go to hell.” But I want to call people on the edge of eternity and get them to Jesus. I want to win them.

How sad would it be if you called yourself an evangelical and you never evangelize? I mean that would just be the craziest thing in the world, wouldn’t it? How sad would it be to call yourself a Christian and never manifest Christ? That’s our goal and our whole mandate from God. How shall they hear unless someone preaches to them and how shall the preacher go unless he is sent? Someone must send them. God is grabbing people right now and saying, “I’ll take you! I’ll send you! I’ll send you as an ambassador of My Kingdom to bring news—Good News. It is the only thing that can save you.

I want every Christian to preach and share their testimony, but there’s only one group of people in the body of Christ who can give the world the bread that will last forever—the Lord Jesus Christ. There’s only one group—the evangelists. It’s the highest privilege. Jesus didn’t come and say, “I seek to build my influence.” He said that He came to “seek and to save that which was lost” (Luke 19:10).

I pray you don’t see evangelism as some hard thing that you have to slug out in the streets. I pray you see it as the highest call of God. You have a God who is mighty to save. My hope is that you’d think, “My goodness! What a huge privilege! What a massive calling to bring to the church the heartbeat of the Father for people. To remind them that there’s a big world out there. That we are an army sent to invade darkness and get the devil off the backs of people.

No one’s ever loved me like Jesus and I’m sure no one’s ever loved you like God has loved you as well. He knew the full package of your history and all the baggage that we carry when we come to the cross. But He knew He could make us a new creation. We’d be the greatest thieves in the world and almost worse than the enemy if we kept that news to ourselves. But you won’t, and the church won’t either. In fact, the truth is being established more compellingly than ever before.

## THE NEED FOR THE EVANGELIST

In Europe, the Lord is pushing back the powers of darkness and drawing people to His light in remarkable ways. Unlike years past, we have seen multitudes turn to Jesus in the last five years. It's amazing to preach to so many, especially in Europe. We've seen thousands of people turn to Jesus in this pivotal hour. I know that God is determined in His heavenly imperative to open up a massive window of grace to bring in the harvest. Believers have been crying out for the last twenty or thirty years, especially in places like America, England, Australia, and Europe—the western countries where we have experienced a widespread hardening of hearts that has led to decline in Christianity.

I have a friend in Africa named Tracy Evans, an evangelist who works with many children. She also goes into the prisons every week by herself to preach the gospel. She told me that ninety percent of the inmates just say, "Yes, I want Jesus!" They're incarcerated and desperate in the knowledge that there's no way of getting out of prison. And upon hearing the gospel from Tracy, they realize that only Jesus can give them true freedom. So, they turn to the Lord and in a very real way, once the Son sets them free, they are freer behind bars than the uncaged multitudes who do not know God and remain enslaved by their sin...

She has told me some crazy stories. She has even been shipwrecked for the gospel like Paul and was stuck on an island for one year. She has never felt the need to marry and just wanted to give herself wholeheartedly to the amazing call of being an evangelist. She and I had a conversation one time about the fact that Yale University did a study on what happens when there is a decline of Christian evangelism in a culture. Obviously, less people will be saved. But did you know that sin also increases? This happens not only in the world, but in the church as well, apathy begins to take root in the hearts of believers and starts to capture their imagination.

In our day, we see whole societies collapsing on multiple fronts as the institutions that shape the thinking, morality, and perspective of a people descend into moral and spiritual anarchy. For example, we're faced with economic collapse, the vast sphere of arts and entertainment in various cultures has abandoned most



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

guidelines of right and wrong in the name of artistic freedom causing a moral landslide in its arena.

Additionally, church attendance and growth are declining. One study revealed certain indicators about the role of the church and the decline of culture. According to the study, worship wasn't the problem, nor was prayer the problem. There was only one watershed factor that the study discovered played a seminal role in the decline of society. The major decline in western society throughout history is attributed to evangelistic Christianity taking a backseat. In other words, when people think we don't really need to share the gospel, that we are in a good standing before the Lord, we see an alienation from God and deterioration in the culture.

Let's not be a generation who just cruises through. Let's not get comfortable and think there is no need for evangelism because a thousand people attend a conference or our church. If we do, years later, entire societal structures breakdown, and the church breaks down with it.

People need to see Jesus clearly and they need to hear the gospel clearly—the only place they will see Him is through us and the only place they will hear the gospel is through, you guessed it, us. 1 Timothy 2:4 tells us that God desires none to perish, He has a plan for everyone to hear the good news in their lifetime. So, if your heart's been pulled and prodded, follow the Lord and fulfill your evangelistic call. Tell Jesus you will fully give yourself to His call. Tell Him that you will preach the gospel both inside and outside the church. Tell Him that you will share the testimonies, the stories, and the heart of the Father—the relational aspect of His love for humanity. And in doing so, join the great harvest.

# THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

Bernie Moore

## SYNOPSIS

Has God called you to be an evangelist? In this lesson, Evangelist Bernie Moore, teaches on the unique calling of the evangelist. You will catch his passion for lost souls as you read his powerful teaching as well as learn what it takes to be effective in evangelistic ministry.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Bernie Moore burns with passion for the lost. He lives with a deep sense of urgency to preach the gospel to the ends of the earth as quickly as possible. Bernie has been called to go where few want to go and where few dare go. He has been called to spread the gospel in some of the most dangerous parts of the earth, such as Pakistan. By the grace of God, thus far, Bernie's ministry has seen over 1,500,000 people come to know Jesus Christ as their Savior. Remarkably, thousands have received miracles and several new church plants have been established abroad as well as existing churches tripling and quadrupling in size as a result of Bernie's gospel crusades.

For more info, visit: <https://berniemooreministries.com>



## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

**M**y mentor, Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke, said, “An evangelist is best described as a burning messenger with a burning message on burning wheels of fire.” Oswald Smith is quoted as saying, “We talk of the second coming of Christ when half the world has never heard of the first.” This quote speaks to evangelists because we are continually in pursuit of souls. Charles Spurgeon said, “If sinners be damned, at least let them leap to hell over our bodies. If they will perish, let them perish with our arms wrapped about their knees. Let no one go there unwarned, unprayed for, and unpreached to.”

The great William Booth said, “Not called did you say? Not heard the call, I think you should have said. Put your ear down to the Bible and hear Him, hear the call of Jesus bid you to go and pull sinners out of the fire of sin. Put your ear down to the burden and agonized heart of humanity and listen to his pitiful wails for help. Go stand by the gates of hell and hear the damned entreat you to go to their father’s house and bid their brothers and sisters, servants, neighbors, masters, and friends not to come to this place. Then look Christ in the face, look Christ in the face, whose mercy you profess to obey and tell Him whether you will join in heart and soul and body and circumstance in your march to publish His mercy to the world.” All of these quotes have one thing in common—they speak volumes to the God-called evangelist.

Paul describes the office of the evangelist in Ephesians 4:11-13, “And he gave the apostles, the prophets, the evangelists, the shepherds and teachers, to equip the saints for the work of ministry, for building up the body of Christ, until we all attain to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to mature manhood, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ” (ESV).

Paul teaches that Jesus gave the church different ministry gifts. Some are to be evangelists, some pastors, and some teachers. This is done for the equipping of the saints to do the work of the ministry and for the edifying of the body of Christ. So, if you’re called to be a pastor, stay in that lane. If you’re called to be an evangelist, stay in that lane, otherwise, you will be frustrated and aggravated. You will inevitably be confused if you try to fulfill the destiny of another calling.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

The call of an evangelist is extremely special as it is the very heartbeat of the Lord. We are after one thing and one thing only—soul winning. An evangelist lives a life of action. He/she doesn't sit around waiting for things to happen, instead, they look for areas of need and find dark areas in the world to go where the gospel has yet to be preached. And once they do, they shine God's light and love to those lost and dying in darkness.

Many people think that they have to be associated with a well-known person or ministry to get started in evangelism. Nothing could be further from the truth. The only person or ministry anyone needs to be associated with to jumpstart an evangelistic ministry is the Holy Spirit, who empowers and lives inside of you. It is non-negotiable, it's the Holy Spirit within you that makes a difference in the world. Listen to this, if you have the Holy Spirit within you, then you have everything you need to fulfill your evangelistic calling.

Paul was emphatic driving this reality home, pulling no punches as he penned the first five verses of 1 Corinthians, Chapter 2, “And I, brethren, when I came to you, did not come with excellence of speech or of wisdom declaring to you the testimony of God. For I determined not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and Him crucified. I was with you in weakness, in fear, and in much trembling. And my speech and my preaching were not with persuasive words of human wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power, that your faith should not be in the wisdom of men but in the power of God” (NKJV).

Jesus has literally equipped you with every tool necessary to win souls and be a world changer. And if you're wondering what those tools are, it's simple, there's only one tool that you need—the Lord Himself. Jesus evangelized in the power of the Holy Spirit, period! Before He performed any miracles, did anything of great significance, called anyone to follow Him, or was known to the world, Jesus went to where His cousin, John, was baptizing people. Jesus Himself told John that He needed to be baptized.

We read in Luke 3:21-22, “When all the people were being baptized, Jesus was baptized too. And as he was praying, heaven was opened and the Holy Spirit

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

descended on him in bodily form like a dove. And a voice came from heaven: “You are my Son, whom I love; with you I am well pleased.” Before Jesus pursued any kind of ministry, He needed the power of the Holy Spirit in His life. And if Jesus needed the Holy Spirit; how much more do you and I need the power of the Holy Spirit before we do anything ministry related—certainly anything related to evangelism.

Remember King David, Israel’s greatest king in the Old Testament? He had gone through some tremendous personal challenges. Let’s be real—he went through some serious failures. And in a moment of vulnerability, David repents before God. He says in Psalm 51:11, “Do not cast me from your presence or take your Holy Spirit from me.” What David is saying is you can have anything you want God—anything. I’m willing to give up my life, my reputation, my palaces, my friends, whatever you want, but the one thing I cannot live without is your presence: Your Spirit. King David knew that the key to success was living in step with the Holy Spirit.

We can look deeper at the empowerment of the Spirit in relation to the call of the evangelist by studying the life of Jesus. Luke 9:1 describes Him rallying His twelve disciples and giving them power and authority, “When Jesus had called the Twelve together, he gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases.” This verse teaches us key principles when it comes to the office of the evangelist. First, you must be called. Jesus called each of the twelve disciples. You can’t just think, “Let’s do this for six months and see...” There must be a call from heaven resting on your life for evangelism. Secondly, you must be equipped for evangelism. After Jesus called His disciples, He gave them His power and authority. They could cast out the demonic and heal the sick. Thirdly, Jesus gave them an assignment. That assignment was to go into the world with a specific message—to preach the Kingdom of God, an assignment which would be followed by signs and wonders such as healing the sick based upon the authority He conferred on them.

This takes place in the middle of Jesus’s earthly ministry. Obviously, He hadn’t gone to the cross yet, right? He hadn’t given them the Great Commission... No,

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

this is Jesus, the great teacher. He models this ministry while He is with them and then says in effect, “It’s your turn.” He gives them hands-on experience while He is with them. He watches them, leads them, and guides them on the road to being great evangelists almost like an apprenticeship program. He teaches them as they go about their journey.

This is why I always encourage young people who feel as though they are called to evangelism and come to us and ask for advice. I encourage them to serve under an evangelist or an evangelistic ministry. I am emphatic and encourage them to go and serve that evangelist and let them teach you, let them train you. No matter what you have to do, no matter where you are, no matter how much you think you have it all together—you can always learn. An evangelist needs to be a lifelong learner. Years ago, I worked in the mailroom of a warehouse when the opportunity came for me to serve and then travel with Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke. I kept my mouth shut and my ears open—I gleaned all I could. I wanted to see firsthand what it took to be an evangelist, especially from someone like him. Similarly, I encourage those with a vision for evangelism to learn, grow, and place themselves under the life of another evangelist, especially someone with a proven ministry that God has clearly blessed, and is evangelizing effectively.

Returning to the book of Luke, we see in Luke 10:1, that Jesus also equipped more than His original twelve in evangelism. “After this the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent them two by two ahead of him to every town and place where he was about to go.” These are seventy-two others who also have been following Him. They were committed to Jesus and felt called by Him. He gave them the same instructions that he gave the twelve and developed an advance team with them, sending them out to every town and every village where He was about to go.

In this context, Jesus says, “He told them, ‘The harvest is plentiful, but the workers are few. Ask the Lord of the harvest, therefore, to send out workers into his harvest field.’” (Luke 10:2). Jesus sends out seventy-two people, observing that there was a great need for more evangelists. Recognizing the desperation of the situation, He is essentially saying, “I need you. The world needs you. Come

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

on, let's rally together." Like us, these disciples didn't deserve it, they didn't earn it—but Jesus equipped them and gave them power. He knew they needed His power, His presence, and the Holy Spirit with them before they could do anything effectively for the Kingdom.

"The harvest is plentiful but the workers are few" (Luke 10:2). Jesus observed over two thousand years ago, and it still rings true today—the evangelists are still few. But then Jesus makes this statement in Luke 10:3, "Go! I am sending you out like lambs among wolves. No one said it's easy, in fact the Bible teaches quite the opposite! Evangelism is not for the faint of heart, it's not a cakewalk, but truthfully, we don't need weak, half-hearted Christ followers. The world doesn't need them either. We need people that are passionate for souls, people who will rise up in the face of great adversity—evangelists who won't give up and throw in the towel. *This* is the context in which Jesus sent out those who followed Him.

After all these years, my question to you is this: *Do you think the instructions have changed?* Jesus still needs us to do the same thing, to go into the harvest fields of the earth. To go to the lost, to those who are desperate and in need. To go to those who have never heard the gospel, to those who are searching. Go! The world needs *you*.

However, notice what it says in Luke 10:16, "The one who hears you hears me, and the one who rejects you rejects me, and the one who rejects me rejects him who sent me"(ESV). The truth is, you're going to face rejection. An evangelist is like a spiritual mailman, our job is to deliver the mail. We didn't write the letter, nor did we initiate the contents of the package. Our job is to simply deliver the message to a lost and dying world—that's why we're here, that's our responsibility. We are simply the carriers of this priceless message, the gospel, to the ends of the earth. It's the Holy Spirit's job to bring conviction to those who are searching. If someone doesn't want you to deliver the mail, they're not rejecting you, they're rejecting Jesus. Rejection is a given, so be prepared to face it—but don't take it personally.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

“The seventy-two returned with joy and said, ‘Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name’” (Luke 10:17). The authority to heal the sick and cast out demons comes with the office of the evangelist. Jesus gave His disciples, the “... authority to trample on snakes and scorpions and to overcome all the power of the enemy;” and assured them that, “nothing will harm you.” (Luke 10:19). But He reminds them of what really matters and gets their perspective on point in Luke 10:20, saying, “However, do not rejoice that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.” The call of an evangelist is so evident in this passage of Scripture.

## THE CHARACTERISTICS OF AN EVANGELIST

Now that we’ve looked at the call of the evangelist, there are eight characteristics of an evangelist that I think are important to mention.

**1. An Evangelist Must Have a Passion for Soul Winning.** We read about Jesus’s passion for people in Mark 1:32-34, “That evening after sunset the people brought to Jesus all the sick and demon-possessed. The whole town gathered at the door, and Jesus healed many who had various diseases. He also drove out many demons, but he would not let the demons speak because they knew who he was.”

This is at the beginning of Jesus’s ministry so the disciples were brand new at this, still, they saw first-hand Jesus’ heart for people. Notice that the whole city was gathered to Him—they all came to see Jesus. Continuing in Mark, we see that “Very early in the morning, while it was still dark, Jesus got up, left the house and went off to a solitary place, where he prayed” (Mark 1:35). The disciples went in search of him and said, “Everyone is looking for You.” (Mark 1:37). *Don’t you know that the whole world is still looking for Him?* They are just looking in the wrong places. Some are looking for Jesus in their relationships. Others in money, fame, power, or reputation. Some seek Him in narcotics or substance abuse. There’s a huge void in the human soul that only Jesus can fill. He is the only One who can satisfy what seems to be missing.

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

Notice that Jesus doesn't go back to the same crowd. He answered His disciples by saying, "Let us go somewhere else—to the nearby villages so I can preach there also. That is why I have come" (Mark 1:38). An evangelist must have a passion for soul winning. You must keep going. Never settle for just one good meeting, one good conference, or one good crusade. Jesus Himself said His purpose in this was revealed. He needed to keep going to the next cities, the next towns, the next villages—He needed to encounter more people.

In the midst of this glorious revival in the city, Peter and all the disciples remind Jesus of what took place the night before, "Man, remember what happened last night? The whole city was gathered together to hear You." But Jesus knew many other cities and regions needed His message. They needed to hear the good news and receive His abundant life. In Luke 19:10, Jesus told His disciples why He was here, "For the Son of Man came to seek and to save the lost." That was His mission's statement.

Paul emulated this very thing in 1 Corinthians 9:19, "Though I am free and belong to no one, I have made myself a slave to everyone, to win as many as possible." Paul expounds on that a bit more as the passage goes on, "To the Jews I became like a Jew, to win the Jews. To those under the law I became like one under the law (though I myself am not under the law), so as to win those under the law. To those not having the law I became like one not having the law (though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law), so as to win those not having the law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to all people so that by all possible means I might save some. I do all this for the sake of the gospel, that I may share in its blessings" (1 Corinthians 9:20-23). Paul trained his spiritual son, Timothy, in the same understanding, "...who (God) wants all people to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth. For there is one God and one mediator between God and mankind, the man Christ Jesus" (1 Timothy 2:4-5). Both Jesus and Paul had a passion for souls.

**2. An Evangelist Must Be Bold.** Jesus was bold everywhere He went. But taking a look at Acts 20:18-20, look at what Paul said, "And when they came to him, he said to them: 'You yourselves know how I lived among you the whole time from

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

the first day that I set foot in Asia, serving the Lord with all humility and with tears and with trials that happened to me through the plots of the Jews; how I did not shrink from declaring to you anything that was profitable, and teaching you in public and from house to house, testifying both to Jews and to Greeks of repentance toward God and of faith in our Lord Jesus Christ” (ESV). Paul had the boldness to preach repentance—repentance toward God and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ. He continues with this, “And now, behold, I am going to Jerusalem, constrained by the Spirit, not knowing what will happen to me there, except that the Holy Spirit testifies to me in every city that imprisonment and afflictions await me.” (Acts 20:21-22). Remember, evangelism is not for the faint of heart. Paul was acquainted with opposition, but he declares, “I’m not giving up. I’m going for it!”

Upon returning from a crusade in South Sudan, I realized I had contracted malaria. I was in the hospital for four days. The doctor came to me and said, “You’re going to be here for two to three weeks. You have four different strains of malaria, and your case is one of the worst I’ve seen.” I told her that I had too much to do to stay that long. But she insisted that it was just the way it was.

I remember being alone one night in the room. I was praying and crying out to God, “Lord, this isn’t right. This isn’t fair.” But the Lord reminded me of the trials and tribulations that await all of us. He whispered to me, “You should have seen what My disciples had to go through—what they faced. And in a moment of clarity, He said to me, “If you want, I can find someone else.” Right there in my hospital bed I had to repent, “God, I’ll never complain about the trials and tribulations we face on the field or when we come home. I’ll never complain. Lord, forgive me. It’s an honor to serve You. It’s an honor to go on Your behalf. It’s an honor to travel to win souls. evangelism takes passion and boldness.

**3. An Evangelist Must Be Filled With Fire.** “*The fire on the altar must be kept burning; it must not go out. Every morning the priest is to add firewood and arrange the burnt offering on the fire and burn the fat of the fellowship offerings on it*” (Leviticus 6:12). An evangelist must keep the fire burning. How does he/

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

she do that? The Lord spoke this to me years ago, “Bernie the wood that causes the fire to burn on the altar of your heart is prayer.”

**4. An Evangelist Must Be a Man or Woman of Prayer.** Jesus certainly lived a prayerful life. He constantly found a secluded place to pray. You’ve got to spend time with God, otherwise you’ve got nothing to say. Luke 6:12 shows us the importance Jesus placed on prayer. “One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God.” Jesus didn’t say a sixty second bed-time prayer to the Father. No, He spent all night in prayer. It was vitally important for Jesus, our Savior, the Son of God, to commune intimately with the Father.

The disciples knew it was important to Jesus and asked Him, One day Jesus was praying in a certain place. When he finished, one of his disciples said to him, “Lord, teach us to pray, just as John taught his disciples” (Luke 11:1).

They could have asked Jesus for anything, “Hey Lord, teach us how to effectively raise money. Teach us how to effectively communicate the gospel. Teach us how to perform miracles. Teach us how to run an organized ministry. Teach us how to listen to the voice of the Lord.” But they didn’t ask these things. They asked, “Teach us to pray.” Jesus responded by saying, “When you pray...” (Luke 11:2). It wasn’t a matter of if they could fit prayer into their busy day. No, Jesus said, “When you pray...” It wasn’t up for negotiation, it was a given and He then taught them what we know as the Lord’s Prayer.

In the book of Mark, we read the story of a father and his demonic son. He brought the son to the disciples, but they couldn’t cast out the demon—this boy was in bad shape. So, the father relayed the story to Jesus, “A man in the crowd answered, ‘Teacher, I brought you my son, who is possessed by a spirit that has robbed him of speech. Whenever it seizes him, it throws him to the ground. He foams at the mouth, gnashes his teeth and becomes rigid. I asked your disciples to drive out the spirit, but they could not’” (Mark 9:17-18).

Jesus had already equipped His disciples and given them the necessary authority. But the reality was they were missing something, and Jesus rebuked them in

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

front of everybody. After saying in Mark 9:19, “You faithless generation...” (ESV), Jesus instructed they bring the boy to Him. Then He cast out the demon and the boy was set free. “After Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately, ‘Why couldn’t we drive it out?’ He replied, ‘This kind can come out only by prayer’ (Mark 9:28-29).

**5. An Evangelist Must Live Daily In the Word.** This is vital to your personal development as an evangelist and a minister of the Word of God. Grab this and tuck it away in your spirit. John 1:1, “In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God. And the Word was God.” “He was with God in the beginning. Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made. In him was life, and that life was the light of all mankind” (John 1:2-4). Life is in Jesus, not in your job, not in your friends, not in your ministry, not in your family, not in anything else. Jesus is life and you find Him by diving into the Word and letting the Holy Spirit breathe His life over you.

John 1:14 says, “The Word became flesh and made His dwelling among us. We have seen His glory, the glory of the one and only Son, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth.” We also read in Hebrews 4:12 that, “...the Word of God is alive and active.” That’s why you can open up the Bible and read a verse of Scripture that you’ve read ten, twelve, or one-hundred times, and it speaks something completely different. Why? Because the Word is active. It’s alive. We also read in Revelation 19:11-13, “I saw heaven standing open and there before me was a white horse, whose rider is called Faithful and True. With justice he judges and wages war. His eyes are like blazing fire, and on his head are many crowns. He has a name written on him that no one knows but he himself. He is dressed in a robe dipped in blood, and his name is the Word of God.”

**6. An Evangelist Must Live a Holy Life.** Please, for the sake of the Kingdom, for the sake of the gospel, for the sake of the ministry, live a holy life. I find it interesting that Herod feared John the Baptist. “...because Herod feared John and protected him, knowing him to be a righteous and holy man. When Herod heard John, he was greatly puzzled; yet he liked to listen to him” (Mark 6:20).

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

This is Herod, he feared no one. But there was something different about the way John the Baptist lived that attracted Herod to his life. In Luke 1:68, we read that God speaks by the mouth of His holy prophets—through vessels cleansed with His blood. In Romans 6:19, Paul speaks of us presenting our members, our bodies as slaves of righteousness for holiness.

Again, in Romans 12:1, Paul talks about being holy, “Therefore, I urge you, brothers and sisters, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy and pleasing to God--this is your true and proper worship.” Our job is to represent Jesus. We must be holy in order to do so.

**7. An Evangelist Must Be Clothed With Humility.** There’s no room for pride in the ministry or in your life. It doesn’t matter if you had ten people attend your crusade or ten million. At the end of the day, are people going to heaven who weren’t going before? That’s why Jesus told the disciples, “Rejoice that your names are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life” (Luke 10:20). Humility cures worldliness.

**8. An Evangelist Must Never Give Up.** A few years ago, I was returning home from the largest crusade we had ever held. I was thrilled about what God had done, but coming home, I had no one to share my excitement with so, I called my friend Daniel Kolenda. We ended up having breakfast together and as we ate, I unburdened my heart and asked him, “Dan, what is wrong? I don’t understand. God is doing great things. It’s glorious! But because I’ve got no one to share it with, sometimes I want to give up.” He understood because He had been there himself. There are moments of isolation, loneliness, and sadness that defy reason, but at the end of the day, the calling still burns within you and that passion for souls needs to be kept ablaze by a life lived on the edge of eternity in spite of being overwhelmed by inscrutable emotions of distance, grief, and solitude. That fire that must never go out, so it is critical that you find a covenant friend who can help fan the flames of your heavenly call and counter an overcast countenance—a Jonathan to your David with whom you can be vulnerable without fear of judgment.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

In Galatians 2:20, Paul makes this profound statement, “I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I now live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.” Here is what he is saying in the vernacular, “I’m a dead man. I’m not my own anymore. I belong to Him. I’m never going to give up.”

If you want to know Paul’s resume, he shares it with the Corinthian church, “Are they Hebrews? So am I. Are they Israelites? So am I. Are they Abraham’s descendants? So am I. Are they servants of Christ? (I am out of my mind to talk like this.) I am more. I have worked much harder, been in prison more frequently, been flogged more severely, and been exposed to death again and again. Five times I received from the Jews the forty lashes minus one. Three times I was beaten with rods, once I was pelted with stones, three times I was shipwrecked, I spent a night and a day in the open sea, I have been constantly on the move. I have been in danger from rivers, in danger from bandits, in danger from my fellow Jews, in danger from Gentiles; in danger in the city, in danger in the country, in danger at sea; and in danger from false believers. I have labored and toiled and have often gone without sleep; I have known hunger and thirst and have often gone without food; I have been cold and naked. Besides everything else, I face daily the pressure of my concern for all the churches. Who is weak, and I do not feel weak? Who is led into sin, and I do not inwardly burn?

If I must boast, I will boast of the things that show my weakness. The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, who is to be praised forever, knows that I am not lying. In Damascus the governor under King Aretas had the city of the Damascenes guarded in order to arrest me. But I was lowered in a basket from a window in the wall and slipped through his hands” (2 Corinthians 11:22-33).

How do you know you are called? I believe Paul answers it more effectively than anyone. “For when I preach the gospel, I cannot boast, since I am compelled to preach. Woe to me if I do not preach the gospel” (1 Corinthians 9:16). Are you burdened with a “woe?” This was Paul’s life—he simply wanted people to know Christ, and this is why he told Timothy, “In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead, and in view of his appearing and

## THE CALL OF THE EVANGELIST

his kingdom, I give you this charge: Preach the word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage—with great patience and careful instruction. For the time will come when people will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. But you, keep your head in all situations, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry” (2 Timothy 4:1-5). Paul ends by saying, “For I am already being poured out like a drink offering, and the time for my departure is near. I have fought the good fight, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith” (2 Timothy 4:6-7).

Jesus impressed upon me this thought when I first started our ministry. He said, “Bernie, if you want to go where you’ve never gone, so that you can do what you’ve never done, and see what you’ve never seen, you must be willing to pay a price you’ve never paid.” Let the Lord take you by the hand on a beautiful journey. Embrace the call of an evangelist, go and win a lost and dying world to Jesus. Put these principles into practice and may God bless everything you touch, in Jesus’s name. The call of an evangelist is on you. Amen.





# **VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST**

LaDonna Osborn

## **SYNOPSIS**

Dr. LaDonna Osborn is the daughter of missionary evangelists T.L. and Daisy Osborn. She has served God as an evangelist for over fifty years. In this chapter, she shares important questions every evangelist should consider.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Bishop LaDonna C. Osborn is President and CEO of Osborn Ministries International, the world missionary organization founded by her parents in 1949. She is founder and overseer of the International Gospel Fellowship (of churches and ministries), which includes more than 60 ministries, over 1,000 churches in more than 50 nations throughout the globe. Dr. Osborn is also the co-Founder and president of the Women's International Network which encourages, educates, and equips women for all areas of Christian ministry.

For more info, visit: <https://osborn.org/>



## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

I have been in evangelistic ministry for over fifty years, I find that even today, I must stop occasionally and reevaluate. I think it's healthy. We must reevaluate why we do what we do and if we are being effective. We must let the Holy Spirit probe us and pierce our hearts with questions. Those questions are helpful to clear the fog and give us a fresh perspective on who we are and why we do evangelism."

Our greatest passion, as evangelists, is to help people know Jesus Christ, to hear and understand His glorious transforming gospel—His truth. That is what we have a passion to do: To find people who don't know Him and use the most effective means possible to reach the most people and bring them Jesus, allowing the Lord to transform them. I love the gospel. I love the product of the gospel—the result. I've seen transformation all over the world, among people who seem beyond hope. But the power of the gospel transcends every other thing, and it reaches into the deepest needs of every human heart.

I also love this statement from the Apostle Paul, "For I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God that brings salvation to everyone who believes: first to the Jew, then to the gentile" (Romans 1:16). The gospel is power. My father, the late Dr. T.L. Osborn, had a way of making gospel truth so simple. This helped evangelists understand their role. He would say, "You don't pray the power down; you preach the power out!" God has given this proclamation gift to the evangelist to cast forth words, the truth of God, in order to establish His presence within people through the proclaimed gospel. That's why I say that the gospel not only is to be proclaimed but demonstrated—miracles will always follow the proclamation of the gospel. I want to suggest if you don't have miracles in your ministry, reevaluate what you're preaching because the gospel is about Jesus, who He is, what He did, why, for whom, and how He proved it. He proved it through miracles.

So, let's look at these questions... These questions are soul searching. For example, how do we see ourselves? How do we see others? How do we see our role in the overall plan of God? These are important questions for evangelists because we are

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

so focused on the lost, we don't always take time to evaluate if what we are doing produces the greatest impact in the fullness of God's plan.

Here are five questions every evangelist needs to ask to redefine their perspective. I'm not suggesting that your perspective is wrong. But we must evaluate ourselves as we teach others who follow our example. This is critical because they're part of our legacy as evangelists and we want them to be able to answer these questions as well.

**1. Who Called You to Be An Evangelist, or Soul Winner?** There's a story found in Matthew 4:18-19 that unlocks this discussion for us. "And Jesus walking by the Sea of Galilee saw two brothers, Simon called Peter and Andrew, his brother. They were casting a net into the sea for they were fishermen. And He said to them, 'Follow Me and I will make you fishers of people.'" This is the beginning of the disciples' call that transformed them into "fishers of people." The answer to our first question is that *Jesus is the One who called you!* It wasn't just a feeling. It wasn't just somebody else's influence. It wasn't just wanting to replicate or copy some other person that you appreciated or valued. None of that is what calls you.

I'm the daughter of legendary parents. My father and mother are known all over the world—Dr. T.L. and Daisy Osborn. In 1947, they pioneered what we know today as mass miracle evangelism. This idea of taking the gospel of Christ to people who didn't know Him and expecting the message to be evidenced by miracles, was not known back then. Yes, others did miracles, others gathered crowds. But to stand before the public, no chairs, no aisles, no VIP section, nothing but masses of people and say, "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever. He does the same things today. He always has. You will receive your miracle today." That was very bold. It seemed arrogant to presume that one would know what God would do. But we've come a long way in our understanding.

Because of their more than seventy years of legendary ministry, many young evangelists say, "I want to be another T. L. Osborn." Some even say, "I want to do more than he did." I hope they do, but my point is *we must always know who calls us*. People ask me if I am in ministry because of my parents. I tell them

## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

my father never assumed what the Lord would ask me to do. I've seen men and women come to him and ask, "What do you think I should do with my life?" He would just laugh and then answer, "I don't know. God told me what to do. He'll tell you what to do." For sure, Jesus will talk to you. Just be sure you're following Him. It's important that we not move away from Him. I hope you're hearing me, know who called you—Jesus is the One who calls.

Now notice this. Jesus said, "Follow Me and I'll make you fishers of people." Before we get to the fishers of people part, we see the words "Follow Me and I'll make you." Let's hover over the idea of following Jesus for a moment. This is the first part of the call—allowing Him to make us. My journey in ministry, and in following the Lord, has been a long and continual change. When I gave my life to Christ at the age of seven, I didn't start doing what I do today. No! I had to learn from the Scriptures to follow Jesus. We have one master—we have one voice we listen to while we remain flexible. He's making us. The Apostle Paul wrote, "For those God foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son..." (Romans 8:29). Our eternal destiny is to be conformed to the image of Christ. You cannot be an evangelist and not be like Jesus. You cannot be a pastor and not be like Jesus. You cannot call yourself a prophet and not be like Jesus. Everything is centered in the person of Jesus Christ—He is the axis our identity revolves around. So, when Jesus says, "*Follow Me and I'll make you...*" it comes out of the relationship we have with Him. We follow, and He promises to make us whatever is needed to fulfill His purpose in our lives. We cooperate with Him. This is such an important principle for us as evangelists; that we follow Jesus and let Him continue to *make us*.

My parents were ordinary people. They married young, out of poor families with simple backgrounds but they were sincere about the Lord. They loved Him and wanted to serve Him. In 1942, they served as evangelists in the United States holding revivals in churches. Because they were popular, they then became pastors. They were good pastors, their churches grew, and they taught people. Then, in 1945, their church hosted a missionary who presented the need for the gospel in India. My father and mother immediately felt as though they were needed more in India. They resigned their church, packed up their little six-

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

month-old baby (he was six months old), and headed to the Far East. This was at the end of World War II and they took a military freighter to India just as Mahatma Gandhi was leading the Indian people through a peaceful revolution to gain independence from Great Britain. My parents saw the millions that Gandhi was leading. Although they were peaceful, they could see in the eyes of the Hindus and the Muslims that they were empty, devoutly religious people, but they had no hope in Christ. That was a turning point for my parents.

It seemed to them that they were failing in India because when they confronted people of other religions, they had no proof that their message was true. When they used the Bible as their proof, it didn't work. The Hindus already had their holy books, and the Muslims had the Koran. For them, the Bible had no meaning. My father and mother left India as failures in their own mind. They began pastoring again in the United States, but as they did, they began praying every day, "How do we convince people of other faiths that You are the true God; that the Bible is Your Word; that Jesus came to save people from their sins as He died on the cross; that You rose again and are now seated at the right hand of the Father?" Those you see as heroes of the faith, didn't get there overnight. They had their own journeys of seeking God, seeing a need, wanting to be useful, and crying out to God for solutions.

After praying for a year, early one morning, Jesus Himself, entered my mother and father's bedroom. This story is recorded at length, in different publications. When my father saw Jesus, everything in him changed. He was already sincere. He already loved the Lord. He was already a preacher. He was already passionate about helping people... But he didn't have the solutions necessary to break through the restrictions of people's traditional thinking and their empty religion. My mother said that when my father saw Jesus, she had a new husband. He said, "I became a Jesus man, not a denominational man, but a Jesus man." From that time on, that one encounter with the resurrected Jesus has influenced our entire family.

My family now consists of four generations of gospel-proclaimers because we learned to focus on Jesus. He is the message, the Master, the Truth, the Way. He

## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

is the Lord, the Door, the Promise, and the Fulfillment. He is the Redeemer, the Healer, the Restorer, the Comforter. He is everything! When you see Jesus, you have the beginnings of miracles that transform everything. When you know what to look for, you don't see what others see, you just see Jesus. You see the grace of God. You see His determined plan to redeem humanity and to bring people into His family.

Don't ever stop letting Jesus make you. I want new revelation of Jesus every day, I don't want to preach canned speeches and pre-fab sermons. I want to have the heart of God who reaches people that I don't know. He knows them, and He loves them. He is determined to use ordinary people like you and me to be His representatives. There is no greater joy than helping people come into contact with Jesus, through whose face they see the Father. He's the revealer of God. Jesus is the One who makes the unknown God knowable, the untouchable God touchable, the distant God present—this is what people are waiting for. Remember, Jesus is the One who called you. He wants you to trust Him and to cooperate with Him as He *makes you*. He's the Potter who continually *makes us* into vessels of honor.

**2. What Did Jesus Call You To Do?** Looking back on Matthew, Chapter 4, the emphasis is not only on fishing for people, but transformation. The second thing He wants us to do is fish for people. What does it mean to fish for people? People must always be the focus of our evangelistic efforts.

I have known evangelists who, when meeting a person on the street, push them aside. They ignore them and they disrespect them—Jesus wasn't and isn't like that. He stopped when a blind beggar called out to Him. He stopped in the middle of a pressing crowd when one woman touched Him. He saw people! No matter how large our crusades grow, we must never negate the priority of individual people. People are our business—we're not in the business of making money or becoming popular, our motivation is never to have personal acclaim, titles, or renown. Oh, no! Our motivation is love—the love that God puts in our hearts. I have seen God reach through the eternities and come into the dust of some of the most unlikely places to touch the most unlikely people. Those who



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

are not valued in their own community. They're maimed, blind, or deaf. They have sores on their body, but then the finger of God reaches through and touches that "valueless" person and transforms that life. Miracles are God's expression, through our ministries, of His love for people.

**3. How Do You Fit Into the Body of Christ?** This is an important question for evangelists. I've been in ministry long enough to see the evolution of understanding within the body of Christ concerning the gift of the evangelist. I remember the day that evangelists were not respected in the church. There was tension between the evangelist and the pastor. The evangelist thought the pastor's job was boring because they remained with the same people. The pastor thought the evangelist wasn't producing fruit because they ran from place to place. The misunderstanding of each other's primary calling was painfully evident and created division and tension.

We've come a long way in the western church. But I deal with pastors in other nations around the world. Many times, in these churches, evangelists are still nobodies. They are never asked to speak in the church or facilitate in equipping the Christians for soul winning. They're not supported financially, or their vision is not shared. The best way to say it, is that they are just a bother, and, of course, you can imagine how I encourage these evangelists. I try to connect with their pastors and bring them together in an understanding of the partnership they have in evangelism to do the work of Christ. We must not try to elevate one gift above another because every gift is needed.

So, when I ask you as an evangelist, "How do you fit into the body of Christ?" I know it's a loaded question. Some of us come out of traditions where we had to defend evangelism. Maybe we made Christians feel bad, or pastors feel bad, because they weren't worried about souls. We had to learn not to be so harsh. We learned how to appreciate one another and to understand that the role of discipleship in evangelism is also important. It ties together the local church with all of the gifts. So, the question is, "How do you fit? Do you feel awkward? Do you know your place?"

## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

Ephesians 4:11 says, “So Christ himself gave the apostles, the prophets, the evangelists, the pastors and teachers, to equip his people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ.” Evangelists aren’t supposed to work alone.

In our local church, we require evangelists to give a certain amount of their time to train believers through soul winning classes. This exposes the church to the work of evangelism. It empowers the believer, and ultimately the body of Christ to do the work of ministry. Everyone’s included. We have to teach evangelism “so that the body of Christ will be edified, built up, until we all come to the unity of faith.” We don’t have to agree on every little doctrine, or on every interpretation of every verse of Scripture, that is not where unity rests. We are commanded in the Scriptures to have unity of faith and knowledge of Jesus, until we grow up to the full stature of Christ. It doesn’t say anything about agreeing on every doctrine. Instead it says, “...so that we will not be children, tossed to and fro” (Ephesians 4:14 ESV).

Don’t you get tired of Christians acting like children—arguing over every little thing? Come on! Let’s grow up into Christ and let Him be seen! Let’s not focus on our perceptions and arguments. Let’s let Christ be glorified “...Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of people in their deceitful scheming. Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will grow to become in every respect the mature body of him who is the head, that is, Christ” (Ephesians 2:14-15). I’m talking about “From him the whole body, joined and held together by every supporting ligament, grows and builds itself up in love, as each part does its work” (Ephesians 4:16). This is what causes growth of the body for the edifying of itself in love—building up the Body of Christ is God’s plan.

When we see division, competition, or arguments among us, who do you think is the author of that kind of confusion? Who would want the Church to be divided? Who would not want the Church to grow up? Who would not want Christ to be glorified? Who would want to squelch the average member of a church and make

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

them feel like they have nothing to offer because this great hero out there is doing so much for God? I know who the source is and you do too. We must recognize that God's plan comes through gifts, callings, and activities that involve every believer. Anything that comes against that, we recognize the source, and we resist it. We don't cooperate with that; we stay focused.

Listen, if you follow my ministry at all, you know I'm not one to argue or correct people. I don't have time for that. I preach the truth. I say it clearly from the Scripture and let the seed do its work. If I spent all my time running around correcting everyone's doctrines or perspectives, I wouldn't get my work done. I'm called to testify of Christ; to make Him known in my world, and I do that with great joy.

The assignment of the evangelist is part of the core function of the church of Jesus Christ. If we don't have outreach, if we're not winning souls, we don't need a church. We grow up in Christ so we can reflect Him properly. The world has no hope if the church offers them no help. This dynamic between the needs of the world and the solutions the church offers, should work together. Every gift is important. The evangelist cannot feel that their calling is the most important; that they're the only ones who care about souls. They shouldn't see themselves as the only ones gifted in presenting the gospel; that they're the ones with the signs and wonders. If they do, they put themselves on a pedestal. That is not supported by Scripture. They shouldn't pull themselves out of the context of the body of Christ.

What if fifteen pastors won't cooperate with us? What if they don't want our converts? Do we give up on the church? No, the church is God's idea. Every local body doesn't reflect Christ properly, but let's not give up on them because the Holy Spirit is yet working among His people. Jesus is still the head. He's had grace with us through our rough times. He will continue. Every culture, every group of people, are not at the same place spiritually. Give God a chance to work. Don't just wipe them up and say, "Enough of you. I'm just going to do my thing!" No, we're part of the whole. I find Christian pastors to cooperate with our evangelism activities when I go into cities. I don't take a team other than

## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

photographers and maybe one evangelist to work with me. We work with local people because we want them to be involved and receive the fruit—the harvest from the evangelism event. I am part of the local church, and I refuse to be ignored, that's my perspective because I'm part of the body of Christ. He needs me to be part of His church and the church grows because of my efforts. My attitude toward the church makes a difference in that growth—let's just consider that.

I grew up in evangelism. I didn't live in the states until I was 14-years-old. We traveled from nation to nation, living for months at a time in each country. All of the daily activities, school, chores, the market, laundry by the river, boiling the water, all the things that you do in mission work—we did that. Every evening, by 4:00 o'clock, we were on a campaign field somewhere presenting Christ to multitudes of people. That's been my life, but we always did it in cooperation with local churches. As a family, we had a home church. We would come back for two-or-three-weeks, and then go back somewhere. We were in church every time that we were home, however, I always felt like a stranger in church. I was the little missionary kid that didn't understand American culture, but I went because that's what Christians do, you go to church.

I know evangelists today who don't have a home church. My credibility in evangelism is tied to my involvement in the local church where I am accountable to people. They see my life. I learn to love them. I am ministered to by their gifts because that's where the gifts are really exercised. As evangelists, it's not difficult to love unbelievers. But what about those saints who get on your last nerve. The gifts of the Spirit are for the Body of Christ. We learn to love one another, heal one another, and prefer one another. Oh! The miracle that you live in when you can be aligned with a congregation of people. I believe in the local church.

In December of 1986, I had a two-hour encounter with the Lord and during that time, I was transformed. I have evangelism in my blood, that's who I am, however, the revelation that I had was about the church. I began to see that God loves the church. It is from Him the whole body, joined and held together by every supporting ligament, grows and builds itself up in love, as each part does

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

its work. You know the church is the only thing that you see starting in Genesis that is present throughout eternity? Zion—the temple of God that comes down and in which God dwells with His people, is a picture of the church. God loves the church, but we’ve been a mess much of the time throughout church history, still, God didn’t give up.

This revelation concerning the church has refined everything that I do as an evangelist. If we only have doctrines, we’re going to argue. If we have to agree on everything, we will never get along. But wow! When Christ can be exalted, then there is potential. We can let Him be the oil that keeps our rough edges from cutting each other. Where we allow Him to be established—grown up in us so that we can grow up in Him, that’s where His Holy Spirit transforms us into one Body that becomes a great light in the world. That’s our calling. As an evangelist, let’s remember we are part of the body of Christ.

**4. What Is Your Message?** This is probably the simplest one to answer because we find it clearly stated in 1 Corinthians 15. The Apostle Paul lays out the gospel. It’s that gospel through which you were saved. And, that gospel includes the truth that Christ died for our sins. He was buried. He rose again on the third day, but it doesn’t stop there. Then, He (Jesus) was seen. Now Paul gives a list of people who saw Jesus, but I want you to notice something. We always think of the death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus. But He must be seen through a demonstration of miracles—supernatural manifestations. He must be seen! He was seen then, He is seen now. Apostolic ministry is centered in the person and the work of Jesus Christ: His identity, His example, His death, His burial, His resurrection, His presence... That’s Apostolic ministry, that is our message.

In Matthew 28, Jesus says teach them what I’ve taught you. He taught them the gospel. In Mark 16, we learn to give the gospel to every creature with signs following. In Luke 24, repentance and forgiveness of sin must be preached—that’s the gospel. In John 20:21, “as the Father sent Me, I send you.” That’s our mandate. And then, Romans 1:16, “For I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God that brings salvation to everyone who believes.” Oh, my goodness! What a wonderful message we have to bring to our world. Never

## VITAL QUESTIONS FOR EVERY EVANGELIST

abandon the message. We live in times of faddish teachings. Things come and go. The marketing of messages has become the priority in so many cases. Avoid that as an evangelist. Don't succumb to trickery or any kind of manipulation of people to try to gain followers, even professions of faith. No, just keep your message clear. What is your message? Reevaluate. Look at it, listen to yourself. Look at your notes. What scriptures are you giving people? What fruit are you wanting to happen through their lives and through their faith? What are you teaching them to expect? What are you presenting to them that builds their faith? Is it in your word or Christ Words, in your gifts or Christ's actions? You see, we have to ask *what is our message?*

When I'm overseas doing mass evangelism, I never touch people when I pray for them. I'd like to, it's biblical. In local churches, I love to touch people. When people come to me on the street, I touch them. When I go into the hospitals, I pray for sick people and touch them. But I never do in evangelism among the unreached because they don't yet understand that everything is from Jesus. They see me as someone special, someone different and think that I must be important. Many believe that if they can touch me, or have my hand on them, that will make everything better. No, everything I do should point them to Christ. I give them His Words, not mine. I give them His promises, not mine. I show that He's the Healer, not me. That way, I can tell them when I get on the plane and leave town that Jesus stays with them—they don't need me, they have Him. Your message is going to shape people's assumptions about what their faith or who their faith is in—just a tip for you.

**5. What Is Your Authority?** The authority is the Holy Spirit. Acts 10:38, "...how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him." You can put your name in any of that because His authority is your authority. Why can I say that? Luke 24:49 says, "I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high" The power Jesus had, He promised. Father wants you to have it. Don't try to do this thing without the power. We read in Acts that Jesus commanded them not to depart from Jerusalem but to wait for

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

the promise of the Father. “But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit has come on you...” (Acts 1:8). This was answered when 120 men and women who were gathered in that upper room were filled with the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit wasn’t just resting on them as with the prophets in the Old Testament. No, the Holy Spirit filled them. This is a profound truth. That was the fulfillment of God’s desire from the beginning. We now know that when this authority, this power, comes to us, it’s the Holy Spirit. We know through the Word of God. Our firm ground is the Bible. In it we discover our salvation. In it we understand the plan of God. In it we learn the path to come into a relationship with God through Christ. In it we learn that our ultimate destiny is to be like Christ, filled with His Spirit, and going about doing good—delivering people, healing the sick, and making known the Kingdom of God.

So, these are the questions that are so wonderfully important. Mull these over in your mind. Look at the Scripture. Look up passages that reinforce these ideas and develop your own training for young evangelists. But bring them into a focus of who they are, how they see themselves, how they see people, and how they see their role in God’s greater plan.

# HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

Daniel King

## SYNOPSIS

In the Bible and throughout church history, God has used evangelists to reach individuals and massive crowds of people. In today's lesson, Daniel King gives you an overview of how God has used evangelists over the past 2,000 years.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Dr. Daniel King is a missionary evangelist who has traveled to over 70 nations in his quest for souls. His goal is to lead 1,000,000 people to Jesus every year through massive gospel festivals, distribution of literature, and leadership training. Daniel has written over twenty books including, "You Can Become a Master Soulwinner," "How to Preach the Gospel," and "Proof God is Real." He has more than 600,000 books in print. Daniel is the host of "The Evangelism Podcast" and he has interviewed over 250 evangelists, pastors, missionaries, and church growth experts. Because of his experience and research on evangelism, he is widely regarded as one of the world's leading experts in mass evangelism.

For more info, visit: [www.kingministries.com](http://www.kingministries.com)





## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

**T**here are some who believe that mass evangelism is not effective. But when we study biblical history, it's easy to see that mass evangelism is not only effective, it is an essential part of how God moves. This is not only true within the New Testament framework, but we find mass evangelism beginning in the Old Testament and continuing into our present day.

### EXAMPLES OF MASS EVANGELISM IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

Noah preached to the sinful people of the pre-flood world. In Genesis 6:9 we read that Noah was a “man who walked with God.” The Apostle Peter reiterates that statement by saying that Noah “preached righteousness” (2 Peter 2:5). And he wasn't the only one, we also see that Moses called all of Israel together and preached to them. At his final sermon before his death, Moses gave an altar call and asked the people to make a choice, “This day I call the heavens and the earth as witnesses against you that I have set before you life and death, blessings and curses. Now choose life, so that you and your children may live” (Deuteronomy 30:19).

Moses' successor learned the same from his mentor. Joshua 24:1a reads, “Then Joshua assembled all the tribes of Israel at Shechem.” After sharing testimonies about what God had done for the people of Israel, Joshua also called on the people to make a choice. He said, “...choose for yourselves this day whom you will serve... But as for me and my household, we will serve the Lord” (Joshua 24:15).

And of course, there was the great showdown on the top of Mount Carmel as Elijah preached to Israel. Elijah confronted Ahab and eight hundred-fifty prophets of Baal challenging them with, “How long will you waver between two opinions? If the Lord is God, follow Him; but if Baal, follow him” (1 Kings 18:21). He called upon them to make a definite decision. Although Jonah was not the most willing evangelist, he did the same with the evil people of Nineveh. This may be the greatest example of mass repentance in the Scriptures. “Then the

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

people of Nineveh believed in God; and they called a fast and put on sackcloth, from the greatest to the least of them” (Jonah 3:5 NASB).

### EXAMPLES OF MASS EVANGELISM IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

We know that John the Baptist’s ministry consisted of preaching repentance to large crowds at the Jordan River. “In those days John the Baptist came, preaching in the wilderness of Judea and saying, ‘Repent, for the kingdom of heaven has come near.’” (Matthew 3:1-2). Of course, Jesus frequently preached to large crowds of people. “When He (Jesus) saw the crowds, He had compassion on them...” (Matthew 9:36). Such large crowds came to hear Jesus that He was forced to retreat to a boat in order to preach. On one occasion, Jesus preached to a crowd of five thousand men plus women and children. With a wife and a child for each man, this yields at least 15,000 people.

On the day of Pentecost, Peter preached, and 3,000 people were saved. It is important to note that Peter’s sermon on the day of Pentecost provides an outline of what all evangelists down through the ages have preached. It is often called the *kerygma* which means “to cry” or “to proclaim.” What Peter preached was Jesus’ miraculous birth, death, burial, resurrection, and ascension. He preached the Lordship of Christ and man’s guilt in His crucifixion, “...God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ” (Acts 2:36). Peter then called for repentance. Peter replied, “Repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit” (Acts 2:38).

Philip, the only person specifically called an evangelist in the Bible, preached to crowds in Samaria and saw many people healed and baptized because of his ministry. However, the Apostle Paul was also highly effective in evangelism. When Paul entered a new city on his missionary journeys, he headed straight for the largest crowd of people he could find. Whether it was a synagogue, a marketplace, a stadium, or a group of philosophers, Paul loved preaching to crowds. In Pisidian Antioch, the entire city gathered to hear Paul and Barnabas

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

preach the gospel. Later they preached to a large number of Jews and Gentiles in Iconium and Lystra. Paul and Silas preached to large numbers of God-fearing Greeks in Thessalonica. In Athens, they preached in the synagogues and in the marketplace, and also in front of the Areopagus. In response to Paul's sermon concerning "the unknown God" in Athens, "some men joined him and believed, among them Dionysius the Areopagite, a woman named Damaris, and others with them" (Acts 17:34 NKJV).

### MASS EVANGELISM IN THE EARLY CHURCH

The first Christians faced an almost insurmountable evangelistic problem. They were surrounded on all sides by a pagan culture. Yet, in many ways, this was the perfect time in history to evangelize for three reasons. First, Greek was the common language. The early evangelists were able to preach in Greek and be understood everywhere they went. Second, the Romans imposed peace, *Pax Romana*, upon the entire empire making it safe to travel. Third, the Romans built roads throughout the empire which connected the regions. It was in this atmosphere that the disciples began to proclaim the gospel.

The early apostles were all evangelists in their thinking and in their methods. Acts 5:42 tells us, "And daily in the temple, and in every house, they did not cease teaching and preaching Jesus as the Christ" (NKJV). Notice their preaching began in the temple, probably to gathered masses then continued in people's homes.

### MASS EVANGELISM IN A TIME OF PERSECUTION

Because it was difficult, if not impossible, to preach in the open-air during times of persecution, sometimes evangelism took place in people's homes. When the Christians endured persecution at the hands of the Romans, the sands of the coliseum became their pulpit as they were martyred for their faith. One Christian who continued to preach as he was martyred was Polycarp (69-156), the Bishop of Smyrna. When the Roman proconsul gave him an opportunity to deny Christ

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

in exchange for his freedom, Polycarp declared, “Eighty and six years have I served Him, and He never did me any injury: how then can I blaspheme my King and my Saviour?” In response, the Romans threatened to burn him, but he replied, “You threaten me with fire which burns for an hour, and after a little is extinguished, but you are ignorant of the fire of the coming judgment and of eternal punishment, reserved for the ungodly.”

## **MASS EVANGELISM FOR THE EARLY CHURCH FATHERS**

Celsus made this accusation about Christians in 177 A.D. “Their aim is to convince only worthless and contemptible people, idiots, slaves, poor women, and children. They behave like mountebanks and beggars; they would not dare to address an audience of intelligent men, but if they see a group of young people or slaves or rough folk, there they push themselves in and seek to win the admiration of the crowd...”

Irenaeus (130-200) was a bishop in Lyons. He was known for preaching in the marketplace of the city of Lugdunum and the surrounding areas. Origen (184-253) gave this report about the preaching habits of early believers, “Christians do not neglect, as far as in them lies, to take measures to disseminate their doctrine throughout the whole world. Some of them, accordingly, have made it their business to itinerate not only through cities, but even villages and country houses, that they might make converts to God.”

Eusebius wrote an account of a disciple of Jesus named Thaddaeus who healed a man named Abgar of Edessa of a disease. Thaddaeus then asked for the opportunity to preach to a crowd of local citizens. He preached, “Since I have been sent to proclaim the word publicly, tomorrow assemble for me all thy citizens, and I will preach the word of God, concerning the coming of Jesus, how he was born; and concerning his mission, for what purpose he was sent by the Father; and concerning the power of his works...and how he humbled himself, and died and debased his divinity, and was crucified, and descended into Hades, and burst the bars which from eternity had not been broken, and raised from

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

the dead, for he descended alone, but rose with many, and thus ascended to his Father.” That’s the gospel!

Eusebius is also known for saying this about the early second century, “Then starting out upon long journeys they performed the office of evangelists, being filled with the desire to preach Christ to those who had not yet heard the word of faith, and to deliver to them the divine Gospels. And when they had laid the foundations of the faith in foreign places, they appointed others as pastors, and entrusted them with the nurture of those that had recently been brought in, while they themselves went on again to other countries, with the grace and the co-operation of God. For a great many wonderful works were done through them by the power of the divine Spirit, so that at the first hearing whole multitudes of men eagerly embraced the religion of the Creator of the universe.”

St. Patrick was born into a Christian family in the year 461 on the west coast of Great Britain. At the age of sixteen, he was captured, taken to Ireland, and sold as a slave. For six years, he spent many cold and lonely nights guarding his owner’s sheep from wolves and bears—his only comfort was prayer. One night, he had a vision of a ship leaving Ireland and took the vision as a sign from God. Through his belief in it, he managed to escape his captors, boarding a ship home, where he became a priest learning Latin and French. His time as a slave developed in him a close relationship with God and a dedication to prayer. After returning home, he often prayed for the Irish people to be converted to Christianity. In his book, he shares a vision God gave him of a man from Ireland who said, “We appeal to you, holy servant boy, to come and walk among us.” Because of this vision, Patrick asked to be sent back to Ireland. He went from village to village preaching the gospel and baptizing new believers. One of his first converts was his former master.

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

### **MASS EVANGELISM DURING THE MIDDLE AGES—THE MONKS**

During the Middle Ages, the primary group engaged in evangelism were the monastics. Some monks withdrew from society and lived solitary lives in the wilderness, but others were known for preaching the gospel.

Boniface (680-754) discovered that many people worshiped a sacred oak tree dedicated to the god Thor. They believed Thor would destroy anyone who touched his sacred tree. Boniface, recalling the story of Elijah and his confrontation with the prophets of Baal, grabbed an ax and chopped it down. When Thor didn't strike down the bold monk, many became Christians. Boniface used the wood from the tree to build a chapel and preached the gospel throughout Bavaria and Thuringia. He continued to tear down heathen shrines and build churches. Eventually, as an old man, he was martyred by a group of pagans, but he estimated that he baptized over 100,000 Germans before he died.

Francis of Assisi (1182-1226) was the son of a rich cloth merchant. He spent his early years living in great luxury and was known for his partying. At twenty-seven, God instructed him to repair the church and live a life of poverty. During his party days, his father was happy to pay his bills. When Francis began to give money to the poor, however, his father became angry and sued him. In the courtroom, Francis took off his fancy clothes and left his purse at his father's feet. He put on a brown woolen cloak, tied a rope around his waist, and renounced the pursuit of wealth. Matthew 10:7-8 became his guiding verse, "As you go, proclaim this message: 'The kingdom of heaven has come near.' Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give."

Francis traveled from village to village feeding the poor, preaching the gospel, and repairing church buildings. He also started a new order of friars. Francis sent them out two-by-two giving them strict orders to be obedient, to live in poverty, and to live chaste lives. They dressed like him and simply preached the gospel. By 1264, there were around 200,000 Franciscans who lived in 8,000 cloisters. It was

## **HISTORY OF EVANGELISM**

these Franciscans who took monasticism out of the monastery and ventured out into the world to evangelize, taking care of the sick and the poor as they went.

### **EVANGELISM DURING THE REFORMATION**

Martin Luther (1483-1546) started a firestorm in the Roman Catholic church when he nailed his Ninety-Five Theses to the door of the Wittenberg church. These were written to protest the sale of indulgences—a way for people to buy forgiveness from sins. In an effort to protect their source of income, the church tried to silence Luther, but he refused to be quiet. In 1521, the pope excommunicated Luther and threatened to burn him at the stake. Prince Frederick of Saxony protected Luther and the Lutheran Church was born. Luther's focus was not evangelism, but rather reformation of the church. However, his teaching ignited the historical Reformation and laid the foundation for today's evangelistic church.

The French Reformer John Calvin (1509-1564) also laid reformational groundwork. He taught that Adam's original sin brought condemnation upon all humankind. He believed it was impossible for man to do anything to merit his/her own salvation. It was by grace and that God takes the initiative in salvation.

These two were instrumental in cultivating the biggest innovations of the Reformation—the restoration of the primacy of Scripture, a restoration of the practice of biblical preaching, a return to the gospel message, and the teaching on the “priesthood of every believer.” These revelations both equip and empower every Christian to study Scripture for himself and to do evangelism. The combined teaching of Luther and Calvin became the foundation that Wesley and Whitefield would build upon.

### **THE AGE OF MASS EVANGELISM**

Jonathan Edwards (1703-1758) was instrumental in what is known as the First Great Awakening. A graduate of Yale University at age seventeen, he pastored his grandfather's church in a prominent American colony. He studied up to



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

twelve-hours-a-day and his sermons were long and dry. His words were spoken with clarity and precision while he often paused and roamed about the audience with piercing eyes. When he preached on hell, he was graphic in his depictions of fire and horror. Many of his listeners responded by crying out in repentance. His most notable sermon is entitled, “Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God.”

George Whitefield (1714-1770) grew up as an innkeeper. In college, he joined the Holy Club at Oxford with John and Charles Wesley. His dramatic style of preaching was frowned upon in puritan society and he was forced out of churches and into fields. In 1739, Whitefield preached at the coal mine town of Kingswood. The miners would stop to listen to him as they left work and it is said that as Whitefield preached, white streaks appeared on the miner’s cheeks as tears poured from their eyes.

In his lifetime, Whitefield preached over 18,000 times to an estimated ten million people. It is believed that more than ten percent of New England’s population got saved in Whitefield’s meetings and over 50,000 people joined the church. He used his words to paint pictures and crowds listened intently to his sermons. He preached without a prepared manuscript. His sermons normally went on for more than one-and-one-half-hours, often speaking several times each day. He would, “...urge those who were under conviction to go home, fall on their knees before God and plead with Him to give them the grace of salvation.”

John Wesley (1703-1791) was the founder of the Methodist church. On October 14, 1735, John and his brother, Charles, set sail for the American colonies. On the ship, Wesley met some Moravian settlers. He was impressed with their deep faith. During the voyage, a storm arose and broke the mast of the ship. Wesley and the sailors panicked, but the Moravians calmly sang songs and prayed together. This led Wesley to seek after the kind of faith he witnessed among the Moravians.

On May 24, 1738, Wesley records what happened at what is known as the Aldersgate experience, “In the evening I went very unwillingly to a society in Aldersgate Street, where one was reading Luther’s Preface to the Epistle to the

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

Romans. About a quarter before nine, while he was describing the change which God works in the heart through faith in Christ, I felt my heart strangely warmed. I felt I did trust in Christ, Christ alone for Salvation..."

A year later, he joined his Oxford friend George Whitefield in Bristol and Kingswood where Wesley learned to preach in the open air. It was difficult for him at first. He is recorded as saying, "I had been all my life so tenacious of every point relating to decency and order that I should have thought the saving of souls almost a sin if it had not been done in a church. But the account of his meeting with Whitefield shows that he "submitted to be more vile and proclaimed in the highways the glad tidings of salvation."

By the time Wesley finished preaching outdoors during his visit, he had preached to approximately 10,500. It is said that, "...in the last five months of 1739, he preached five hundred times, and only five of these sermons were delivered in a church." Wesley is estimated to have traveled over 4,000 miles every year. The distance he rode on horseback is said to equal ten trips around the globe. He often preached twenty sermons every week. That amounts to over 40,000 sermons in his lifetime. "When John Wesley was carried to his grave, ...He left behind 135,000 members and 541 itinerant preachers."

Francis Asbury (1745-1816) was a Methodist Circuit Rider in America. During his forty-five years of ministry, it is estimated that Asbury traveled by horseback and carriage over 300,000 miles and delivered around 16,500 sermons. When Asbury arrived in America, there were about 600 Methodists in the country. By the time he died, the Methodist faith had spread all over the new country and claimed over 214,000 members.

The Cane Ridge Revival occurred in August of 1801 at Cane Ridge, KY. It attracted as many as 25,000 people, over ten percent of the population of the state of Kentucky. It was characterized by lively preaching and invoked strong emotions. Dozens of preachers participated including Presbyterians, Baptists, and Methodists and a key organizer was Barton Stone. He was a Presbyterian preacher who was invited to Kentucky by the frontiersman, Daniel Boone. The

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Cane Ridge Revival is said to be “the most important religious gathering in all of American history.”

Charles Finney (1792-1875) was instrumental during the Second Great Awakening. At the age of twenty-nine, in 1821, he was both converted and filled with the Holy Spirit on the same day. He had decided to settle the question of his salvation, so he walked into the woods near his home in Adams, New York. He promised himself, “I will accept it today, or I will die in the attempt.” He had an encounter with God, and he experienced a strong emotion. Describing that day, he wrote, “No words can describe the wonderful joy that was shed abroad in my heart. I wept aloud with joy and love. The waves came over me and over me, one after another, until I cried out, ‘I shall die if these waves continue to pass over me. Lord, I cannot bear any more.’”

Finney had been trained to be a lawyer, and while he was scheduled to argue a case for a client the morning after his conversion, Finney instead told his client, “I have a retainer from the Lord Jesus Christ to plead his cause and I cannot plead yours.” He immediately started to tell others about his salvation experience. Several other people were saved within twenty-four hours of his conversion.

Finney preached like a lawyer. He believed a person’s will was involved in salvation. His sermons were shaped like arguments in a courtroom that were designed to persuade the listener to repent of his sins and trust Christ for salvation. He emphasized “the human will,” and worked to convince his audience to use their will to turn away from sin and towards faith in Christ. During his 50 years of preaching, more than 500,000 people were saved.

At the age of seventeen, D.L. Moody (1837-1899) moved to Boston to become a humble shoe clerk in a store owned by his uncle. While his goal was to become a businessman and make \$100,000, as conditions of his employment, his uncle forced him to attend a church. At first, Moody wanted nothing to do with Christianity. He planned to enjoy life and get saved right before he died. But, on April 21, 1855, at the age of eighteen, he was converted and immediately started sharing his faith with his friends and family.

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

Moody began serving the Lord by doing children's ministry, but was launched to national fame when he visited Great Britain for a preaching tour from 1873 to 1875. The news of his revival meetings in England, along with his soloist Ira Sanky, created great excitement in America's newspapers. Soon, the two of them received invitations to hold large city-wide evangelistic campaigns across America.

The event which had the greatest impact on his life happened during the Great Chicago Fire of 1871. Moody concluded his meeting by asking his congregation to evaluate their relationship to Christ and to return the following week to make a decision. However, many in his service that evening tragically died as the fire ravished the city. Moody carried the guilt of not urging people to make an immediate response to Jesus that night and it changed his methods and caused him to commit to giving an altar call in every service.

For twenty-five years, he traveled all over the United States holding campaigns and inviting people to follow Jesus. During his 40 years of ministry, Moody led over a million people to Jesus, founded three Christian schools, launched a Christian publishing business, and inspired thousands of preachers to be soul winners.

Billy Sunday (1862-1935) started out as a baseball player. In 1886, he was walking down the street in Chicago, and he saw a wagon full of women singing. Someone invited him to a revival meeting and that night he was born again. He often built large wooden tabernacles for his meetings and his team recruited an army of volunteers to help plan and publicize his events. His campaigns often lasted six-to-ten weeks and cost anywhere between \$30,000-\$200,000.

In September 1934, at sixteen years of age, Billy Graham (1918-2018) was invited by a friend to attend a revival meeting. Graham felt like the preacher was speaking straight to him. He attended for several nights, and finally, responded to the altar call as the choir sang, "Just as I am, without one plea." On the night he was saved, he was the only person to go forward for salvation.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

During an evangelistic campaign in Modesto, California in 1948, Graham and his team discussed criticism directed at the evangelists. From this discussion came a set of principles, called *The Modesto Manifesto*. These include absolute financial and moral integrity; cooperation with all the churches whenever possible; avoidance of emotionalism, sensationalism, and negative preaching; and systematic follow-up of new believers.

Before 1949, Graham had already conducted several citywide evangelistic campaigns, but he was still relatively unknown. However, his Los Angeles meetings made front-page news and Graham became well-known almost overnight. The meetings caught the attention of newspaper magnate William Randolph Hurst. Other national newspapers followed suit and within a few weeks, Graham was known across America.

In 1954, Billy Graham went to London for a crusade. Every night for three months, London's Harringay Arena was packed to overflowing. The final meeting of the crusade was held in Wembley Stadium and a record breaking 122,000 people attended. Over the course of his ministry, Billy Graham preached the good news of Christ in over one hundred eighty-five countries on all six continents. His largest crusade was in Seoul, South Korea in 1973 with 1.1 million people. His largest meeting in North America was in Central Park, New York City in 1991 with a gathering of 250,000.

## PENTECOSTAL MASS EVANGELISM

With the explosion of Pentecostalism after the Azusa Street Revival, a new kind of evangelist arose. The "healing evangelists" noticed that in the New Testament, the ministry of Jesus, Peter, Paul, and Philip were all authenticated by signs and wonders. They believed that if Jesus healed people when He walked on this earth that He can heal people today. They preached a "full-gospel," good news for the body, the soul, and for the spirit. Some of these healing evangelists are Marie Woodworth-Etter, John G. Lake, F.F. Bosworth, Aimee Semple McPherson, Smith Wigglesworth, William Branham, and A. A. Allen.

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

The rise of the healing evangelists brought great criticism, in large part from those who believe miracles ceased after the first century church age. But, despite this criticism, Pentecostalism has grown by leaps and bounds. Worldwide, the Spirit-empowered movement is one of the fastest growing parts of the body of Christ today.

Oral Roberts (1918-2009) would certainly fall into this category. God spoke this verse to him, “Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health...” (3 John 2, NKJV). Oral realized that God wants His people to be blessed abundantly and to live in absolute health.

At his first crusade, Oral prayed for three things. First, he asked God to bring one thousand people to the service. Second, he asked that the entire \$160 rent would be paid by the offering. Finally, he asked for one person to be healed dramatically so that everyone would know that it was a miracle from God. All three prayers were answered.

He started holding tent crusades, and his ministry received national attention when a gunman fired a bullet at his head during a service. The miracles which were occurring caught the attention of pastors, and Oral soon began to receive invitations to hold crusades in cities around the United States. He was instrumental in the areas of TV evangelism and the merging of prayer and medicine. He is also the founder of Oral Roberts University. “Something good is going to happen to you!” is the message which Oral Roberts has proclaimed to millions.

T.L. Osborn (1923-2013) and his wife, Daisy, went to India as missionaries in 1945. While there, they experienced deep disappointment at the lack of converts. Osborn found it difficult to communicate the gospel to the Hindu and Muslim people of India. Although they were supposed to stay in India for several years, they went home after only ten months. The Osborn’s began to fast and pray as to why their ministry was so ineffective. Because they were unable to convince Hindus and Muslims about Jesus Christ, the Osborn’s realized that, “People must have proof of the gospel and evidence that Jesus is alive.”

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

T.L. began to pray to have an encounter with Christ, and in response to his prayer, Osborn reports that he received four visions of Jesus. In July of 1947, he heard a woman evangelist named Hattie Hammond preach on seeing Jesus. Osborn cried and prayed all night asking for an encounter with the living Savior. The next morning, he reports, “The Lord Jesus walked into my bedroom at 6:00 a.m.”

Osborn’s second vision of Jesus occurred at a William Branham meeting in Portland, Oregon. Osborn witnessed hundreds of people being healed instantaneously. Osborn says, “I was captivated by the deliverance of a little deaf girl over whom he prayed.” Branham commanded the deaf spirit to come out of the girl and instantly she was able to hear.

His third vision of Jesus was in the pages of the New Testament. After seeing the miracles that occurred at Branham’s meeting, T.L. and Daisy read through the New Testament together as if it was their first time. The verse that impacted them was Hebrews 13:8, “Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever.”

The final vision of Jesus in Osborn’s ministry occurred when Osborn saw Jesus work a miracle through his own ministry. In the fall of 1948, the Osborn’s held a healing revival at their church in Oregon and all the people they prayed for reported being healed. The Osborn’s became convinced that preaching about a miracle-working Jesus was the answer to world evangelism. Soon thereafter, they left the United States once again and went to Jamaica.

In Jamaica, Osborn tried to lay hands on each individual who needed healing, but he was quickly overwhelmed because of the number of people who wanted prayer. He knew he would not be able to lay hands on each individual. Osborn recalled a conversation he had with F.F. Bosworth who has asked, “If I give an altar call and 50 people respond and I lead them in a prayer of salvation, how many of them are saved?” Osborn replied, “All of them.” Bosworth continued, “So if I give a call for healing and 50 people respond and I lead them in a prayer for healing, how many of them can God heal?” Osborn asked, “Why not all of

## HISTORY OF EVANGELISM

them?” Because of this conversation, the idea to pray a single mass prayer for healing was born.

Praying a mass prayer for the sick became a defining ingredient in Osborn’s preaching. He found that when he preached a simple message about Jesus and then prayed for the sick, people would be healed. He invited them to the platform to share their testimony and when the crowd heard about the miracles, they would return to their neighborhoods and invite their friends and family to come to the crusade.

Osborn believed, “...that the most fundamental lesson possible to learn about missions and evangelism is that without miracles, Christianity is little more than another dead religion.” The Osborn’s proclaimed the gospel to millions in seventy-three nations through massive crusades which numbered from 20,000 to 300,000. They published books in 132 languages. They gave away scores of vehicles equipped with films, projectors, and sound systems to help national pastors evangelize their people. They supported over 30,000 native missionaries and planted hundreds of churches.

Reinhard Bonnke (1940-2019), and his wife Anni, spent seven years as missionaries in the country of Lesotho reaching out to people in a traditional way. But Reinhard became frustrated at the low number of salvations. In 1974, he launched his evangelistic organization which is now known as Christ For All Nations (CfaN). The ministry held its first crusade in the national stadium in the country of Botswana. Out of the many churches in the city, only one small fellowship decided to help with the crusade. Bonnke was disappointed when only one hundred people came the first night. Yet, as he preached a powerful message, a man jumped up and shouted, “I’ve just been healed!” Other healings began to happen, and news spread across the city that God was doing miracles. By the last night of that first crusade, the entire stadium was packed and thousands were saved and healed. 12 years later, when Reinhard returned to do another crusade in the city, the leader of a large denomination announced that eighty percent of his pastors had been saved in that first crusade.



## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

He started holding crusades in tents. His first tent seated eight hundred people. But later, his big tent seated 34,000 people and covered three football fields. However, the tent was too small. Soon, crowds of up to 150,000 people were attending each meeting. Kenneth Copeland visited Bonnke in Africa in 1974 and prophesied to him, "You will see a day in which one million souls will respond to the gospel in a single meeting." Copeland's prophecy came to pass on November 12, 2000, the final night of Bonnke's millennium crusade in Lagos, Nigeria where a total of 1,093,000 responded to his altar call and filled out decision cards.

As you can see, throughout each church age, God has used mass evangelism in various forms. Evangelism is pivotal in advancing the Kingdom of God, all He is looking for are those who will answer the call. The Holy Spirit will always back up the truth of the gospel message and equip those who are willing to bring the good news to the masses.

# EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

Donna Shambach

## SYNOPSIS

In this chapter, Evangelist Donna Shambach takes us through a theological journey that helps us to understand the role of the Holy Spirit on the earth. It is the work of the Holy Spirit to woo people toward relationship with the Father through Jesus. As evangelists, we are to be His voice.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Donna Schambach, only daughter of the late global evangelist, R.W. Schambach, has been an educator, lecturer, pastor, and evangelist. Her ministry began in New York City in 1983 and then broadened when she joined her father in 1991. She has traveled to over 40 nations of the world to encourage pastors and leaders and plan mass evangelism outreaches. For over a decade, she also served as a speaker with her father under the historic gospel tent, in the inner cities of the United States. Donna ministers on television and radio, in churches, civic auditoriums, and open-air venues.

For more info, visit: [www.schambachfoundation.org](http://www.schambachfoundation.org)



## EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

**T**he gift of the Holy Spirit is something very dear to my heart. We see the Spirit of God active from the beginning of time when God actually began to form this earth. The Bible says in Genesis 1:1-3, “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. Now the earth was formless and empty, darkness was over the surface of the deep, and the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters. And God said, ‘Let there be light,’ and there was light.”

The first thing that we need to know about the Holy Spirit is that He’s the third part of the Trinity, and as such, He is very much God. The Holy Spirit is that creative force on earth that brings about the Father’s will. And because He’s God, the Holy Spirit is all powerful, a reality that is really important for us to know as evangelists. When we feel weak or feel as though we don’t have what people need to be saved, healed, and delivered, we can rely on the all-powerful work of the Holy Spirit.

The Bible says that the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. Here, the Holy Spirit is depicted as a hovering, creative force that brooded over God’s Word—“Let there be light.” He’s the one that takes that which is invisible and brings it into the world of the visible. So, when you see change begin to take place in a person’s body, mind, or spirit, that’s the work of the Holy Ghost in their life.

The second thing we need to know about Him, is that the Holy Spirit is present everywhere. He is present for all time, as we see in creation, but He is present everywhere we go. There’s no place on Earth that’s hidden from the work of the Holy Spirit. And so, when we go into a crusade or a church service, or perhaps maybe we’re talking to somebody in Wal-Mart, we know that the Holy Spirit has already been hovering over the hearts of men and women and working with them. When we walk into a place, we’re not walking as our own selves, we’re walking as representatives of God. We are looking for what He wants to accomplish in a city, in a crusade, in a church, or even in Wal-Mart. The psalmist, David, said it this way, in Psalm 139:7-10, “Where can I go from your Spirit? Where can I flee from your presence? If I go up to the heavens, you are there; if I make my bed in the depths, you are there. If I rise on the wings of the dawn, if I settle on

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

the far side of the sea, even there your hand will guide me, your right hand will hold me fast.”

I don’t know about you, but as an evangelist, I take great comfort in that Word. When we go into a foreign country or we go into a territory that feels foreign, because there’s hostility or resistance, it’s great to know that we’re not alone. We go in under the command of the Holy Spirit and the good news is He was there before we arrived.

I remember going to minister in inner city of Chicago, the first year I was there I was met with much resistance, even from the church. But I had an assurance in my heart that God had sent me. So, I opened my mouth and said, “I didn’t come to put on a show, but I have come to work with what the Holy Spirit has already been doing in your heart. God has been talking to you, God has been drawing you to Himself. I’m here to encourage you that all you have to do is surrender to Him and your life can be changed.”

That was all that needed to be said. God began to save people and perform healing miracles. Listen, even in the most hostile of situations, you have to know the Holy Spirit is there and He knows all things. Similarly, the Holy Spirit is God’s agent on earth to make all the provisions of the atonement and Kingdom living available to humankind—to help them understand how to connect with God and His amazing plans. That doesn’t just go for the person who’s receiving their healing or receiving Christ—that goes for the minister too. If the Holy Spirit is the one who brings about God’s will on earth, He has a specific way to get it done and there’s an appropriate response from us. We may have studied and prepared our notes, and we should, but in the delivery of the message, we must always be sensitive to the Holy Spirit’s leading. There could be a different way that He has us say something or He may have us highlight something that will connect to that group of people—that’s happened to me on so many different occasions.

Let’s talk a little bit about the mission of the Holy Spirit. The Bible tells us the Father is always drawing people to Himself (John 12). He says when Jesus is

## EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

lifted up from the earth, when He goes to the cross, it's going to be a spectacle. He said He would, "...will draw all people to myself"(John 12:32). This is the work of the Holy Spirit. The Father's will is to draw people, but the Holy Spirit is the One who's calling. This is something that we need to understand when we evangelize, our job is to be the voice for that call. We always want to let people know that God is calling them; that God wants to invite them to receive Him. It's up to the Holy Spirit to open their ears to hear that call. That call of the Holy Spirit is a holy wooing. Wooing is an old-fashioned word that has to do with when a man falls in love with a woman. He starts to beckon her, calling her unto himself. When he's smitten with her and he wants to marry her, there's a wooing, there is a connection. There is a drawing where he tries to get that woman to fall in love with him. The wooing of the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God, the divine Person connecting with a person and saying, "I want you. I want you as my child. I want you as my family member. I love you."

Often, when we go out to preach, we think, "My sermon has to be great. Or, I have to perform. Or I've got to be better than so-and-so. I'm going to be the next Billy Graham." It's important to remember it's not about your evangelism show. You have the privilege to work with the Holy Spirit to call people to Christ. Jesus is the central figure and the Holy Spirit's task through you is to call people to Him. This also takes the pressure off of you as a minister. There are times that you feel like you said things completely wrong. There are times when you think, "I left out the best part of my message." Or, "Why did I say it that way?" But, if you let the Holy Spirit lead, you find that the way it happened connected with somebody. The Holy Spirit is the One who does the work, we get to trust that His ways work.

In Acts 2:39, Peter stood up to preach under the power of the Holy Spirit. Talking about the baptism of the Holy Spirit, he said, "The promise is for you and your children and as many as the Lord will call." And there we have it again; the call of the Holy Spirit working with the hearts of men. We call people not to a religion, not to join a group or denomination, but the call of the Holy Spirit is to receive the fullness of salvation and relationship with Jesus. When we're

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

preaching and teaching, we need to have that end goal in mind, that we're calling people to Jesus and into a right relationship with Him.

Our own personal prayer life must come into play as well. Fasting, emptying of ourselves, being disciplined before God are important because we need the fullness of the Holy Spirit. Especially in the days that we're living in now when hell has unleashed every demonic force to hinder the work of the gospel. We can't go before men and women only with a Bible school degree. We can't go just with a Sunday school badge. We've got to go filled with the Holy Spirit to declare who Jesus is with power.

"His divine power has given us everything we need for a godly life through our knowledge of him who called us by his own glory and goodness" (2 Peter 1:3). I think when Peter wrote this, he thought about how resistant he was to the call of God on his life. How resistant he was to God demonstrating His love through us and he said it was the call of glory and virtue. He didn't just see love on Jesus, he saw the power of God, he saw the miracles, he saw heaven revealed. When we operate in the power of the Holy Spirit, there's a weightiness that comes on you that's not of your personality. There's a weightiness that comes on you that has nothing to do with how great you speak. When you operate in the gift of the Holy Spirit, it attracts people, they know that God is in this place and God is performing mighty miracles. That, in itself, is something we should desire so that the eyes and the focus are not on me, but that God gets the glory, and that men and women are called to Him.

The other thing we see in Peter is that preaching is more than words. People read us when we walk on the platform. They are reading how we minister to people and the results that we get; how transparent we are, if we are humble, if we are prancing around—or if we display a weightiness. These things let them know that they can trust that God has walked onto that platform with us. I've had the privilege of being around great men and women of God. I've been on the platform with Dr. T. L. and Dr. Daisy Osborn in Uganda. Of all of the people that I've met, I would have to say they've walked the most humbly of anybody I've observed. Yet, when they walked on that platform and spoke the simple message

## EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

of the gospel, the Lord opened my eyes to see every word that brother T. L spoke was weighted with holy oil. I could actually see the oil going into the men and the women that were standing there receiving it. As that oil dropped into their spirits, I felt a tidal wave of faith that came alive.

It's also important to know that God calls us out of something, but He also calls us into something. "But you are a chosen people, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, God's special possession, that you may declare the praises of him who called you out of darkness into his wonderful light" (1 Peter 2:9). If we focus on darkness, hell, and punishment, it can come across as though we are beating people up. However, we are not called only to come out of darkness. We must also paint the picture of what it's like in the light. God is calling us into a life of abundance—a life that will be fruitful, not without pain, but a life that will be blessed, that will be transformed because God will be walking with us. As evangelists, we know the Holy Spirit is calling people to the Lord. We often say, "God's calling you out of that dark place, out of that depression. Listen, you're on your way to hell." We have to say those things, but we also want to tell them He's calling them into life, forgiveness, and a life without chains. That's when we've preached the entirety of the gospel.

The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Truth. When we are preaching and teaching, we have to understand that God is presenting His truth to people. We want to keep the gospel simple and allow the Holy Spirit to reveal to those listening exactly what they need to hear. John said it this way, "But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come" (John 16:13).

The Holy Spirit will give you the subject matter to teach for a particular group of people. There are times I've walked into a place really not sure of how the Holy Ghost will lead me, but then He gives me the exact Scripture needed to begin. He knows the hearts of men. He's the One who will put His finger on the exact word that's needed to bring that person into an understanding of Christ. Notice in John 16:13 that the Holy Spirit is listening. If He's listening, then how much more should we be listening? He's listening to what the Father is saying



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

and delivering that truth to us. He has a specific message for a specific group of people and it's our job to let Him preach the truth. He speaks with the authority of Jesus, as do we. And this we can be confident in, knowing that He's the Spirit of Truth, knowing that we're listening to Him, that we're preaching the Word of God which gives us authority.

We are there as the mouthpiece of God Himself. That's why it's very important to be studied, prayerful, and filled with the Holy Spirit. When we open our mouths, we're not representing ourselves. We don't speak as a man or a woman, but we speak as a royal diplomat, giving the decree of heaven that is going to set free a life. Hallelujah! When we're in partnership with the Spirit of Truth, we won't mess up. 1 John 5:6 says it this way, "But when he, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all the truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come." Our task is to present Jesus and it's the Spirit who makes Him known.

Shifting gears, let's take note of some things that sinners need to hear. Number one, sinners need to know they are sinners. Again, this does not mean beating people over the head. In my experience, I don't have to tell people they're sinners, they already know. But people need to know the truth found in Romans 3:23 (KJV), "...for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God." And also, in 1 John 1:6, "If we claim to have fellowship with him and yet walk in the darkness, we lie and do not live out the truth." There will be different types of hearts that you're dealing with when you're preaching. One will be a sinner who's never received Christ. And then there are those who have been around the gospel but aren't living the truth. They claim to be believers, but their lives aren't living out the truth of the Scriptures. The Holy Spirit knows how to draw both types of sinners to Himself. But they need to know that they need to know that they are sinners.

Second, people need to know they can be saved from the punishment of sin right now and for eternity. Romans 6:23, "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." We must present both the punishment and the gift. We can couple that with Romans 10:9-10, "If you

## EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

declare with your mouth, “Jesus is Lord,” and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will be saved. For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved.”

I’ve learned this from my dad, every time sinners came to receive Christ, we had them repeat a prayer. We didn’t want to put words in their mouth, but we wanted them to hear themselves confessing. “I confess my sin and repent of my sin, I turn my back on sin, I turn to you Jesus, come and live in my heart...” And then after we get them to pray that prayer, we have them turn to somebody and say, “I’m a believer in Christ, I just gave my life to Jesus.” Confession of the mouth is that thing that gives us the assurance that we followed through with the decision to answer the call of the Holy Spirit.

We also need the sinner to understand God’s attitude and approach to them. For too long, there have been people who use the Bible to bash people over their head. We should preach convicting sermons, but always bring redemption. People know! They are already living in condemnation if they’re sinners. We need to help them get free of that condemnation.

“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life. *For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him*” (John 3:16-17). Listen, the Bible says that “...While we were still sinners, Christ died for us” (Romans 5:8). God loves us. God has expressed mercy toward us. God wants us to live free of the pain that sin causes. God doesn’t want us living in depression and oppression. He wants us to live forever with Him, but He wants to give us eternal life now. People are suffering in this day and age. They need to hear that God loves them, that the Holy Spirit has been drawing them, and we must give them the truth.

Now the fourth important thing for sinners to know is that we do not need religion. We need humility and the ability to give voice to our repentance. In Luke 18:13-14, Jesus told the story of “...the tax collector stood at a distance.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

He would not even look up to heaven, but beat his breast and said, ‘God, have mercy on me, a sinner.’ I tell you that this man, rather than the other, went home justified before God. For all those who exalt themselves will be humbled, and those who humble themselves will be exalted.” This is Jesus himself speaking the truth that as a sinner, what are the most important things that we do? We humble our hearts, and we repent of our sin. Confessing them is one thing, but repentance has to do with the willingness to turn from them, turn our back on sin, and turn to a life of Christ.

In Acts 3:19, Peter was preaching after the day of Pentecost and he said, “Repent, then, and turn to God, so that your sins may be wiped out, that times of refreshing may come from the Lord.” I don’t know any one more miserable than a backslidden Christian. You know, sinners live in the pigsty, they’re used to the mud. But for those who have known Christ, to have that understanding and awareness, and then know they are playing in the mud, it’s the most miserable place on earth. That’s why we have to preach the truth. It’s not enough just to say we’re Christians, or that we are children of Abraham, or that we grew up in a Christian home. No, we’ve got to confess, “Lord I’m a sinner, I need to get right, I need to get back into a relationship because I need a time of refreshing.”

So many people, especially in the United States, need that refreshing. They’ve once known the presence of God and the power of God, but they wandered off or they picked up another lifestyle and they’re living underneath their circumstance. They’re living below their privilege, but God is calling them to times of refreshing. We might call it revival, renewal, but it’s going to be based on repentance. This is how we’re going to see a revival hit, when people acknowledge and say, “God, I haven’t been living up to my end of the bargain.” And we as preachers and evangelists have to be willing to preach the hard gospel at times because the Spirit will speak the truth.

I believe that sinners also need to understand there is a literal heaven and the literal hell. Jesus taught on hell more than he taught on almost any other subject. He taught about how to gain heaven and how to avoid hell. Today, because of New Age, rationalism, science, or false doctrines, there has been much confusion

## EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT

and many people want to take hell out of the equation. They sound very rational when they say, “How can a loving God send somebody to hell for eternity?” Listen, hell wasn’t created for us. Hell was created for Satan and his angels. But if we reject the only one who is offering salvation and forgiveness to us, and we turn our backs on Him, there’s no other choice. God doesn’t live in hell and if we choose the enemy over God, we’re going to end up in a devil’s hell. We can preach it in a loving way, but we have to preach it with clarity and let people understand that there is a choice between heaven or hell, Christ or the devil. The fear of God has to be restored and it’s not going to be restored unless we preach it—but it is not without hope.

“We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you, because we have heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love you have for all God’s people—the faith and love that spring from the hope stored up for you in heaven and about which you have already heard in the true message of the gospel” (Colossians 1:3-5). Paul is writing to people who went through great tribulation, and he says, “Hey, we’ve got to hope. One day you are going to be living in a literal heaven with Christ Jesus. This is our inheritance.”

This is one of the most powerful truths the Holy Spirit can tell somebody. When we’re in the presence of God and we know we need Jesus Christ to save us and to change us, we think, “How do we get from here to there? How do we become that transformed person?” We can’t do it in our flesh. There’s nothing that we can do to earn more love or favor with Jesus, it’s a matter of letting the Holy Spirit do His work. Ephesians 2:8-9 carries a powerful truth, “For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—not by works, so that no one can boast.” Oh, that’s a verse to praise God over every day, that we can’t earn our salvation, we just thank Him for it.

The last truth that I will emphasize that sinners need to know is faith in Christ is expressed in obedience. We can’t leave people at the altar and say, “See you next year.” We’ve got to lead people into a life of discipleship. “Then Jesus said to his disciples, ‘Whoever wants to be my disciple must deny themselves and take up their cross and follow me. For whoever wants to save their life will

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

lose it, but whoever loses their life for me will find it. What good will it be for someone to gain the whole world, yet forfeit their soul? Or what can anyone give in exchange for their soul?” (Matthew 16:24-26). Do you see the weightiness that Jesus put on being a disciple? Yes, there’s a beginning point, the confession of sin, the repentance from sin, the receiving the love of Christ, but there’s also a continuation of the walk of salvation—we call it sanctification. That is daily time with God, saying no to our fleshly desires, and following Christ in obedience.

As an evangelist, it’s so important to have some type of tool available so that people can study the Word of God and learn how to live a crucified life. That’s why I like to work with local churches. You can tell new converts to come and be part of that church and learn the ways of Christ.

The ways of Christ are supernatural. In John 11:25-26, Jesus speaks to Martha about her dead brother. He says, Martha, “I am the resurrection and the life. The one who believes in me will live, even though they die; and whoever lives by believing in me will never die. Do you believe this?” You see, Jesus was talking about supernatural life. When you go to do the work of an evangelist, there’s going to be opportunity not just to heal the sick and cast out devils, but they’re going to be some dead folks. Who knows, you might have saved somebody from hell by operating in that Spirit of life.

The Holy Spirit is the finger of God. When God points to an area in an unbeliever’s life that needs to be changed, reckoned with, dealt with, it is through the Holy Spirit. In Exodus 31:18, we find mention of the finger of God for the first time. “When the Lord finished speaking to Moses on Mount Sinai, he gave him the two tablets of the covenant law, the tablets of stone inscribed by the finger of God.” In other words, God touched that stone in order to write His law upon it.

In the New Testament, when the finger of God comes, it is to deal with the spirit of man. He writes His law on our hearts of stone. He writes His law on the heart of man so that they can live and please God with their life. It’s His signature on that life and there is power in that finger.

## **EVANGELISM AND THE HOLY SPIRIT**

These words are written in Matthew 12:28 “But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, surely the kingdom of God has come upon you” (NKJV). Luke 11:20 uses the term “finger of God” instead of Spirit, so, we see that the finger of God is the Holy Spirit Himself. As an evangelist, this is something I really want to emphasize, that when you operate under this Spirit, you’re speaking truth. You’re speaking life into people, you’re calling people to repentance, you have the call of God working through you.

But when that finger of God begins to work through you, you’ll see miraculous things because people are going to be set free. You will see people shed chains as demons come out of people. You will see people raised from the dead. This is what we’re looking for—the power of God unto salvation. This is the power of the Holy Spirit to call men and women to Himself and see lives transformed. I hope I have convinced you that you need to have an ongoing, daily relationship with the Holy Ghost. If you want to see your evangelism call go to the next level, get humble, get filled, and start working with the Holy Spirit as never before. I believe you will see a harvest that you could only dream about.



# **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

Joe Oden

## **SYNOPSIS**

In order to be effective as an evangelist, it is vital for you to be supernaturally empowered by the Holy Spirit. In this lesson, Evangelist Joe Oden, teaches on how to activate the power of the Holy Spirit in your evangelistic ministry.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Joe Oden currently serves as the GO2020 National Coordinator for the Assemblies of God, the Evangelism Coordinator for the North Texas District of the Assemblies of God, and on the executive committee of Global Evangelism Alliance, a division of Empowerment 21. In addition, he serves on an Apostolic Council team, led by Cindy Jacobs. He is the executive director of a SUM Bible College and Theological Seminary extension site in the Dallas Metroplex and has served as an adjunct professor at several different Bible Colleges, including CFNI, Heartland School of Ministry, and SUM.



## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

Joe was saved through the Brownsville Revival and had the opportunity to serve as Evangelist Steve Hill's Evangelism Director at Heartland World Ministries Church. Joe received his undergraduate degree at the Brownsville Revival School of Ministry and his Master of Arts in Biblical Studies at SUM Bible College and Theological Seminary. Joe is an author of three books and has traveled America and the world for over 20 years as an evangelist to equip, ignite, and mobilize the local church for the Great Commission. He has also appeared on many influential Christian television programs.

For more info, visit: <https://joeodenministries.com>

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

**T**o move and operate in power evangelism, you have to be filled with the empowerment of the Spirit. In this chapter, I will lay a foundation for Spirit empowerment by looking at the life of Jesus and the Apostles.

Looking at the events in Luke 3, Jesus is thirty years of age. John the Baptist is experiencing the peak of his ministry. Thousands are coming to listen to him preach. He's baptizing multitudes. John becomes aware of the presence of Jesus, and as recorded in John's account says, "The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, 'Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world'" (John 1:29). At that moment, Jesus is baptized, and the Bible says that heaven opened, a dove descended upon Him, and a voice came from heaven, "A voice came from the cloud, saying, "This is my Son, whom I have chosen; listen to him." (Luke 9:35). Up until this point, we must note that Jesus had not preached one message. He'd not laid hands on anyone sick, He hadn't performed any miracles, He was fully God and fully man.

It was this moment, recorded in Luke where Jesus was filled with the Spirit. In Luke 4:1, Jesus went into the desert full of the Spirit. We then read in Luke 4:14, that Jesus came out of the desert in the power of the Spirit. It is one thing to be filled with the Spirit, it's another thing to walk in the power of the Spirit. I like to say it like this, "I'm filled with the Spirit for my sake, but not only for my sake, but for the sake of the world." So, Jesus comes out in power.

As Jesus entered the desert, he fasted for forty days. He prayed. He overcame temptation. And in Luke 4:14, He stepped out in the power of the Spirit. So, what does he do next? The Bible says in Luke 4:18-19 that Jesus began to proclaim the message of the Kingdom. Now you've got to remember, this is Jesus's first public proclamation. Out of everything that He could have preached on, what was it that He chose?

He could have talked about Noah and the ark. He could have talked about Moses and the great deliverance. He could have shared about Daniel in the lion's den, or Shadrack, Meshach, and Abednego. He could have told the story of Esther, or a plethora of things. But God, in His foreknowledge, arranged for Jesus to

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

read the scroll from Isaiah. This was His first public proclamation, “The Spirit of the Lord is on Me because He has anointed me to proclaim Good News to the poor. He has sent Me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to set the oppressed free, to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor” (Luke 4:18-19). Jesus gives a theological definition of why the Spirit of God is upon Him—it’s for proclamation.

Jesus has now begun His earthly proclamation with signs and wonders. He gives us a theological reference and states that He is now able to operate in His Kingdom mandate because He is filled with the Spirit. He now can operate in power evangelism. We must remember that Jesus was fully God and fully man. But in Philippians 2, we learn that Jesus did not consider equality with God something to be grasped. He released His rights and although He was fully God, He humbled Himself. This is important because Jesus did not move in power because of His divinity. He did it through the infilling and the empowerment of the Holy Spirit.

Jesus said the Spirit of the Lord was upon Him to proclaim. That meant there was an empowerment for His proclamation to operate in power evangelism through the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Jesus then explained the nature of His proclamation was, “To proclaim Good News.” This good news is the message of the gospel. Notice what He said would happen after the proclamation of good news—freedom for prisoners. The Jews looked for their Messiah to come in power and demonstration, but they were looking at it in a different way. They believed that Jesus Christ would overthrow the totalitarian regime of Rome and relieve them of their oppression. They were looking for the Messiah to take them back to what they perceived as their glory days when King David reigned, and they were a world empire.

But in essence Jesus said, “I’m not coming in military power. I’m coming in a proclamation that will bring release to the prisoner.” His *modus operandi* wasn’t to set them free from Roman occupation. He had come to set them free from the grip of the devil. He had come to set them free from sin. He’d come to set them

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

free from sickness. He's describing power-evangelism, and he's saying, "This will be done through the empowerment of the Holy Spirit."

In Egypt, the people of Israel wore shackles, and they were bound. Moses showed up with a Spirit empowered proclamation in which they were delivered and set free. That was an Old Testament picture of salvation and it's supernatural. Under the New Covenant, the supernatural proclamation was intended not only for those bound physically, but spiritually. When someone is bound in sin, it takes a supernatural empowered anointing to bring release. He's speaking of people who are blind both spiritually and physically. He addresses people who are oppressed both spiritually and physically. He said, "I have come to bring a proclamation that will bring release to the captive."

In His ministry, when Jesus stepped toward the tomb of Lazarus and said these words, "Lazarus, come forth" (John 11:43 NKJV), Lazarus was raised from the dead. Jesus didn't raise the dead through His divinity, however, He did it through the empowerment of the Holy Spirit. Jesus sets a precedent here. If you had to be divine to move in supernatural power, then the apostles wouldn't have been able to do it. You never would and I never would. But Jesus shows us a pattern: empowered by the Spirit; empowered proclamation; and then empowered proclamation followed by signs and wonders.

After performing many miracles through the empowerment of the Spirit, Jesus goes to the cross and dies. He's raised from the dead, and He spends a number of weeks with His disciples. And at the end of each gospel account, Jesus has a two-point message. He shares two things—be filled with the Spirit and win souls.

Jesus explicitly told them to tarry in Jerusalem until they were endowed with power from on high. The disciples had learned how to preach from the best. They understood theology. They had even healed the sick under the ministry of Christ. But Jesus basically says, "Shut the ministry down. Peter, I don't want you preaching until you are empowered." This was the first time that Peter, John, and Matthew could really preach, not just theology, but the saving message. They could preach kingship, death, and resurrection. The message was now complete

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

for proclamation. But Jesus told them they needed to be baptized in the Holy Spirit for it to be effective in the manner in which He purposed. Then, Jesus ascended.

And in Acts 1:14 we see, “All these were continually devoting themselves with one mind to prayer...” (NASB). Have you ever heard the statement before, concerning someone who’s muscular, “Well, that guy just lives in the gym.” He doesn’t live in the gym, but a lion’s share of what he does is working out. Or about a very intelligent young woman that’s in college, “Well, she’s so bright, she just lives in the library.” Well, she doesn’t live in the library, she’s got a family... She hangs out, she goes out to eat, but what describes her, is a life of study.

It was the same with the apostles. The chief activity they were engaged in while they were waiting was prayer. They’re praying, they’re seeking, and then in Acts 2 the Bible says that suddenly a sound from heaven filled the room. They began to pray in other tongues and a flame of fire fell upon every single head that was in the room. They were magnificently baptized in the Holy Spirit. God didn’t send tongues just to give them a cool new manifestation that had never been done before, it had a purpose. The moment they were filled, they spoke in a manner in which they had never spoken before, and I’m not just talking about the language.

When the Holy Spirit comes, there is an empowerment for tongues, proclamation, and power. Beginning in Luke 1, we see Elizabeth being filled with the Spirit. As soon as she was filled, she began to proclaim. We see the same with Zachariah as he was filled with the Spirit. Luke 1:67 says, “And his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit and prophesied.” What was his prophetic proclamation? It concerned the ministry of his son, John the Baptist. We also see the Spirit of the Lord come upon Simeon in the temple and he proclaimed the arrival of the Messiah (Luke 2:28-32). This is all foundational groundwork in the book of Luke that leads up to the ministry of Jesus. As we saw earlier, the Spirit of the Lord was upon Him to proclaim the arrival of the Kingdom and to move in power-evangelism.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Of course, in Acts 2, the Spirit of God falls upon those waiting in the upper room. They didn't stay in the room or print flyers for everyone to come back for a repeat experience. They stepped out into the public arena as they proclaimed the message. The people heard them speaking in dialects from all over the world. What they were hearing was the proclamation of the gospel in their own language.

As the disciples were filled with the Spirit, power-evangelism began to take place. Whenever we do evangelism, we must proclaim the gospel. You cannot move in any kind of evangelism, let alone power-evangelism without a proclamation of the gospel. What exactly was Peter proclaiming in Acts 2? He was proclaiming that Jesus Christ was the Messiah. He was proclaiming that Jesus Christ was a King to both the Jew and the Gentile. This certainly needs to be preached in our proclamation—Jesus Christ is a ruling King. He's not our buddy in the sky, He's not someone who gets a fist bump from us, He's not just our friend... He's a King that demands allegiance and honor. You don't just casually walk up to a king, there's protocol involved and it must be done with honor and respect—that is what Peter is depicting.

Then Peter begins to proclaim the cross! He states the fact that there had to be a sacrifice for sin. Somebody had to pay the price. Sheep, goats, bulls, and doves could not pay the ransom of our sin because all had sinned and fallen short of the glory of God. There was none righteous, not even one. So, Jesus Christ had to die on a cross. He lived a perfect life and because of this, He could be the spotless lamb that was needed. Most theologians believe that He was stripped totally of all His clothes and He was beaten beyond comprehension. His own mother could not have recognized Him. They nailed His hands to a tree. There were no bathroom breaks or time to swat away the flies. His hands were pinned to the cross and He died. But on the third day, God raised Him from the dead and after His resurrection, Jesus ascended. This is what Peter is proclaiming in the crowd—their need to repent of their sins, to be washed by the blood of the Lamb. That is the gospel message that must accompany power-evangelism. You have not done power-evangelism unless you have shared the gospel pertaining to Jesus Christ. As Peter preached, signs and wonders broke out. People are hearing the

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

gospel supernaturally. Three-thousand people are born again in a manifestation of the power of God in an unprecedented way.

The Word of God was accompanied by signs and wonders. It reminds me of a story, I was in front of a bar one particular night and a friend of mine was sharing Jesus with this guy. They were arguing back and forth for about ten minutes. I'd really had enough of the argument, so I walked over to the gentleman and said, "Have you ever felt the power of God?" We're in front of a bar with the bouncer about ten feet away and listening. The man said, "No." So, I asked, "Would you like to?" He said, "Yes." I laid hands on him and began to pray. The next thing he says is, "I want to get saved right now."

He had gone from venomously arguing with my friend about Jesus to, "I want to get saved!" Why? Because he had an encounter with God. I laid hands on him a second time and when I did, he doubled over and began to throw up on the sidewalk. He literally manifested devils right there on a public sidewalk. We cast the demons out of him, and he comes back up. I laid hands on him again and said "Fire!" A third time, he doubled over and began to pray in the Holy Spirit. He was baptized in the Holy Ghost. So, I asked, "Have you ever done that before?" He responded, "Never in my life."

This gentleman got saved, delivered of demons, and baptized in the Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in tongues in less than five minutes. That is a display of the power of God! All this through the proclamation of the gospel, the demonstration of the power of God, through the baptism of the Spirit. That is the will of God!

When we move in power-evangelism, it's unpredictable. In Acts 3:1, Peter is now on his way to prayer. Most theologians believe that Jews prayed at least twice a day at nine and three. As they near the Temple, Peter and John walk up on a man that's been lame from birth. He asked Peter and John for money. But Peter looked directly into his eyes, and he said, "Silver or gold I do not have, but what I do have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk" (Acts 3:6).

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

This man stood up and jumped! Then, he began to dance and shout and Peter used this miracle to proclaim. This wasn't a church service or a crusade. This was Peter's day-to-day life. He was in the marketplace, headed to the Temple and a divine miracle took place. Peter didn't just say, "I'm glad that you got healed, God bless you. Why don't you come to church with me next Sunday?" No. He used that moment to proclaim the gospel—the cross, the resurrection, and repentance and two-thousand people were born again. There was no way Peter could have predicted that a lame man would be healed, and two-thousand people would be born again as a result.

We have become very predictable, however, God wants us to follow Him and He is absolutely unpredictable. Because of all this, Peter and John were persecuted in Acts 3 and 4. Both men were beaten and told not to preach the name of Jesus. But what do we find them doing? Once again, they're in a place of prayer. They asked God for what I call the "Apostolic Foundation for Power-Evangelism." They said, "Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. Stretch out your hand to heal and perform signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus." (Acts 4:29-30). And at that moment, Luke tells us they were filled with the Spirit and began to proclaim the Word of God boldly. There was a fresh empowerment followed by a bold proclamation.

Moving to Acts, Chapter 5, Peter is at another venue with thousands of people. Many theologians believe that the apostles were praying like this, "God, just as you did in Acts 2 when you filled us with the Spirit, we stepped out and began to proclaim with a demonstration of the power of God, and three-thousand people were born again, do it again! And Lord, as you just used John and I, as we were walking to prayer in the public square, and that man was lame and he was totally healed and he began to jump and he began to dance, and two-thousand people were born again, do it again!" They were saying, "God, may this be the established pattern of the New Testament church, may this be the established pattern of how we do evangelism. God let the concrete dry, Lord, let this be the way that we move forward. That through the proclamation and demonstration,



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

people would get saved, or through the demonstration, then the proclamation, let people get saved.” They were praying, “God, let this be the pattern.”

I want to submit to you that power evangelism is the pattern for the church—not just for apostles, evangelists, and pastors, but for every believer. In Acts 5, as I mentioned earlier, a crowd is gathering. All of the sudden Peter’s shadow begins to heal the sick and thousands are born again. There’s a proclamation that’s released and thousands upon thousands of people are miraculously saved, delivered, healed. It is a divine demonstration of the power of God in a magnificent way. The Bible says in 1 Corinthians 14:1 Pursue love, yet earnestly desire spiritual gifts, but especially that you may prophesy” (NASB). So, what does that mean for the believer? That means that we need to pray on a daily basis that God not only fills us with the Spirit, but that we operate in the gifts of the Spirit. I believe it’s the gifts of the Spirit that really help move the church forward in our culture today.

We need to be a people who prays earnestly for the gifts of the Spirit to be in operation in our lives. Once I held meetings in a particular nation, and I was praying early that morning. I was meeting with the pastor for lunch, but I first spent two-or-three hours with the Lord—that is my normal routine. That particular morning, I was praying, “Lord, allow me to move in the gifts of the Spirit today. Allow me to move in the power of God today.”

As I’m praying, I had a vision of the individual that was going to wait on our table. I saw a blonde lady who was around 21-years-old. I saw her face, and as I did the Lord gave me a specific word. He said, “Tell her that I gave her a very charismatic personality. Everybody likes her. She’s magnetic. She loves people and people love her. But she’s recently been hurt by a father figure in her life that caused her heart to shut down. She can no longer receive love and it breaks My heart. I want to love her, and she can’t receive it.” So, we get to the restaurant, and she begins to wait on our table. It was the very lady that I saw in the vision. I waited until the end, and I gave her a good tip. When she came back to our table, I asked, “Can I have a couple of moments of your time?” She agreed.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

This lady didn't know God. She lived in an area known for occultism and witchcraft. But, very naturally I said, "I was praying for the person who would wait on our table today. And as I was, the Lord gave me a specific word for you." As I was sharing it with her, she began to tear up and she said, "How did you know that?" So, I asked, "Have you ever received Christ?" She said, "Never in my life." Right there at the table, she received Christ for the first time in her life.

The very next day, we held a citywide outreach. A gentleman brought his stepdaughter up to me and introduced me to her. I suddenly began to prophesy to her—to move in power-evangelism. Prophetic evangelism is really tied to power-evangelism and the word the Lord gave me was spot on. She began to weep profusely under the power of God and began to shake. I laid hands on her and she got hit by the power of God and fell to the ground. She's shaking under the power and began to manifest devils. We prayed for her deliverance, and she dedicated her life to Christ.

The next day we're finishing the meetings and after preaching to the crowd, I give the salvation call. I began to minister to people and pray for people. I lay hands on a young lady who's powerfully hit by the power of God. I get a word for her that she needs to receive Christ and she receives Jesus. So, the neat thing about this story is that these three girls, who I met on three separate days, all work at the same restaurant. From the first prayer on Monday morning, God was setting things up.

This is an example of the same demonstration of Spirit empowerment that we just saw in Acts 2, 3, 4, and 5. As I prayed that Monday morning for God to use me in power-evangelism, I was following the apostolic pattern laid forth in the book of Acts. In Luke, Jesus prayed and stepped out in power. In Acts, the disciples prayed and saw demonstrations of power.

Let me give you another practical example. It was the seventh day of a fast where I was seeking the Lord for a demonstration of power. As I sat with my friend at a bookstore coffee shop, I received a word of knowledge for the person sitting behind me. I had never met this person. But I told her that she was like Hannah

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

in the book of 1 Samuel, she was barren and God wanted to use her to give birth. She began to weep right in front of me. She had not been attending church long but was with her pastor. She looked at him and said, “Is that the person you were just telling me about?”

The pastor said, “Yes.” As she looked back at me, she explained, “I’m just now coming to God. I’m coming out of a lesbian relationship, and I just got married. However, I had a miscarriage last week and I’m barren.” Now this lady didn’t believe in the power of God or the anointing of the Holy Spirit. I laid hands on her, and the power of God hit her. She was slain in the Spirit right there in the bookstore. She was out under the power of God for four or five minutes. This allowed me the opportunity to proclaim Jesus to the entire bookstore. I said, “Hey, guys, she hasn’t had a heart attack, she’s been hit by the power of God.”

The manager approached me and said, “We’ve got to call the ambulance. We can’t have people laid out on the floor.” I just told him, “Go for it,” I didn’t argue with him. But about that time, the woman stood up and began to proclaim. She basically quoted Luke 4 and didn’t know it. She said, “Leave him alone. I was bound. I was depressed. I was oppressed. And now I am free.” That’s a manifestation of power-evangelism. It brings complete, total restoration and deliverance. I followed the evangelistic pattern: prayer, proclamation, demonstration, and the acts of the Lord breaking out.

Here’s another story just to encourage you. When I first got saved, I was a drug addict and a drug dealer. I didn’t need a nice, eloquent sermon. I needed a demonstration of power. I was court-ordered by the law to attend church. I just expected to do my time, but a man laid hands on me and when he did, I fell to the ground. As I got up, I was totally delivered. I looked up to God that night and I said, “Lord, if my friends that are hooked on dope could feel this power that’s going through my body right now, they would get born again.” Immediately I began to go out, share the gospel, and pray, “Lord, I want the anointing that was on that man. Put it on me. God use me in that dimension.”

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Now, you don't have to fall down under the power of God a day in your life to experience Him or be delivered. That was just what God did for me. But three months later, I'm in a church service and I laid hands on somebody, and they had a magnificent encounter with God. I said, "Lord, if you can do this in a church, You can do it anywhere." So as a young believer, I began to go to the darkest part of the city where I was raised. There were prostitutes who hung out, pimps, and crack dealers on the corner. It was an area of revelry, partying, and people getting drunk.

In this place, I would walk up to people. And ask, "Have you ever felt the power of God? If not, would you like to?" Then I laid hands on them. I did this for a year-and-a-half, and do you know what happened—not much at all! I didn't see the power come down and I didn't see the glory of the Lord. But I pressed through and walked out 2 Corinthians 4:18 which says, "...we fix our eyes not on what is seen, but on what is unseen, since what is seen is temporary, but what is unseen is eternal" (NIV).

The reason many people either do not do evangelism or stop doing evangelism is because they do not see results. I want to tell you, when you share the gospel, even when you don't see a demonstration of the power of God, you have no idea what's taking place on the inside of that individual. The Apostle Paul said, "I planted the seed, Apollos watered it, but God has been making it grow" (1 Corinthians 3:6). This is the same for us—some sow, others water, but God brings the increase.

When you sow the gospel into someone's heart, you've sown an incorruptible seed that may grow years later. So, we can't fix our eyes on what we can see. Many believers, fix their eyes on the bondage they see, rather than the God they cannot see. They won't articulate it in that fashion, but that's the reason, they've never witnessed to people bound in witchcraft. They've never witnessed to somebody that's in a Muslim lifestyle, or a Hindu lifestyle, or a Buddhist, or an atheist, or any kind of alternative lifestyle. They think the bondage of the enemy in their life is more powerful than the God that they can't see. Well, I've got good news for you, the God you can't see breaks every bondage that you can see. Drug

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

addiction has an expiration date on it, alcoholism has an expiration date on it, atheism has an expiration date... What doesn't have an expiration date is the Kingdom of our God, the gospel, and the blood of Jesus.

So, for a year-and-a-half, I kept going to this area where I was not seeing any fruit whatsoever, but I didn't stop, I kept going. That's a word for some of you that are getting discouraged in your evangelism. I want to tell you today, "Do not quit!" Continue to pray to be freshly empowered by the Spirit as the apostles did. Continue to proclaim because you're going to see a demonstration if you don't give up. A year-and-a-half in, God spoke to me about going on a fast. This was the first time I'd ever done an extended fast and it ended up being 40 days long. However, on the fifth day, I stepped out onto those same streets where I did not see any fruit and I began to speak to a man who was living a gay lifestyle. I didn't bring that up, I just told him about Jesus but I was desiring an encounter. I said, "Can I pray for you? Have you ever felt the power of God?" He said, "No, but I would like to." So, I took my hand, and I laid it on him. When I did, he fell to the ground, flat out onto the concrete and when he got back up, we led him to Jesus Christ. We followed the pattern. We prayed, we were empowered by the Spirit, and we stepped out and saw the demonstration of the power of God.

This is the pattern for evangelism: prayer, proclamation, and demonstration. Thank God that He used Smith Wigglesworth. Thank God for John G. Lake. We thank God for the Stallworth's of times past, William Seymour, and all of the greats. But these people are no longer with us—they've passed on. God wants to use you in a demonstration of power. Right now, make up your mind that you are going to see the power of God come through your life in your evangelism. That you're not going to get discouraged, you're not going to focus on what you can see. Instead, you're going to focus on what you can't see, and in that process, God is going to use you. I want to decree and prophetically say that God is going to use you. Thank God for the ones He has used, but you are now the ones on His radar.

# **THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST**

Mattheus van der Steen

## **SYNOPSIS**

Mattheus van der Steen shows us fourteen ways the Holy Spirit empowers and leads someone called as an evangelist. Jesus both stopped for the one as well as ministered to the masses. As an evangelist, we must see the need in every situation.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Mattheus van der Steen has his home in Rotterdam, the Netherlands. After college, during his time as a Maritime officer, he traveled to several countries. The Lord called him after the war in Kosovo to help the widows and orphans. In 2011, he founded the “House of Heroes Church” and is currently the senior pastor. God uses Mattheus’ organization the “Gospel Music Festival” to disciple nations. Myanmar, Laos, North Korea, and some eighty-two other countries have been touched by this ministry. In 2016, he founded the “School of Supernatural

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

Heroes” where hundreds of people are trained to live a supernatural lifestyle. He is the author of several books among which is bestseller “Dare to Dream.” Mattheus’ dream is to empower the generations with the power of the Holy Spirit and teach others how to live like Jesus.

For more info, visit: <https://www.vandersteenministries.org>

## THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST

**W**ithout the Holy Spirit, we cannot be the witnesses God intended us to be. Jesus said that, on this earth, we would do greater works than He. This is only possible through the empowerment of the Spirit. So, let's look at this incredible, amazing, and most exciting subject of the leading of the Holy Spirit for the evangelist.

I want to start with two very practical examples when it comes to being led by the Holy Spirit as an evangelist. It's important to remember that Jesus stopped for "the one." As evangelists, we too should stop for "the one." However, Jesus also reached the multitudes, and we read of several occasions where He preached to thousands and many believed in Him and were healed of various diseases and afflictions.

Every morning I say to the Holy Spirit, "I am available for you." I think that's one of the most powerful prayers we can pray upon waking up as evangelists. Just say, "Lord, here I am. I am available for you. Thank you for sending the gift of the Holy Spirit. I want to be your witness today." Acts 1:8 tells us that Jesus said wait for the Holy Spirit to come upon you so you will be a witness to the ends of the earth in your city, your province, your nation, and to the ends of the earth.

Recently, I was walking with my wife in our Dutch village. I felt led by the Holy Spirit to stop by the real estate office. My wife Laura asked me if I was interested in buying or selling a house. I assured her I was not, but I felt led to go into that office. My heart beat a little bit faster as I prepared myself to obey the leading of the Holy Spirit.

The lady behind the desk said to me, "Sir, do you have an appointment?" I told her I did not, but I asked to speak to one of the owners. At that exact moment, a young man opened the door of an office. He must have been finished with his meeting and looked as though he was rushing to the restroom. He heard my conversation with the lady at the front desk as I was telling her that I had a Word from the Lord for one of the owners. He stopped and said, "Sir, this is strange, but I feel as though I should speak with you."



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

He said, “I only have five minutes before another meeting.” During all this, I had been praying in the Holy Ghost. I asked the Lord what to say and He revealed to me words of knowledge concerning this young man’s life. One of the gifts the Holy Spirit wants you to operate in is the gift of prophecy. This is a revelatory gift, and when partnered with evangelism, is highly effective.

The man said, “I’m an atheist. How do you know these things about me?” I responded, “God let me know, and He wants to talk to you.” He appeared upset and said again, “I’m an atheist. There is no God.” I told him, “Well then, you have a bigger faith than me. If we had the time, I could talk for two hours about God. I could explain things to you. Sometimes I do that, but in your case, I believe that God wants to touch your life right now. Can I pray for you?” He said, “Yeah, you can pray for me. Do I have to close my eyes?” I instructed him to relax and ask the Holy Spirit to come over him. At that point, he started to weep. He said, “Stop. I feel liquid love. What is this? I’ve never experienced this.” He began sharing his past and how he was involved in drugs and other addictions. And then he said again, “I feel love.” And he continued to weep.

Then he told me about the peace of God that washed over him. I explained, “This is the peace you’ve looked for your whole life. One of the names of the Holy Spirit is ‘the Comforter.’ He’s power, but He’s also peace. Jesus wants to come into your life.” This avowed atheist bowed his knees in front of his entire office, in front of his colleagues, and asked Jesus into his life. My wife and I are now discipling him and helping him in his faith. When led by the Holy Spirit, this is just a normal day for an evangelist.

Years ago, I took 70 Dutch people to India. We were led to a city of about 300,000 people where it was difficult to share the gospel. But the Holy Spirit had already been at work. He had spoken to a young man named Russ Kumar who had been an Indian gang leader. The Holy Spirit told Russ that he would meet a man from Holland. We actually met supernaturally in another city, but it opened up conversations for a large crusade in the city of 300,000.

## THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST

Russ told me, “Evangelist Matt, it’s not possible because the parties here from this religion will not give us permission. It’s just not possible. We will be highly persecuted.” I began to pray, “Lord, if this is from you, you’re going to open the way.” And the Lord did just that. In less than three months, “They gave us permission. The first night was amazing. Some 50,000 people in that city showed up and God broke out in signs, wonders, and miracles. The second day, more people showed up—about 75,000 people. However, the third night, we were praying, fasting, and declaring India shall be saved.

Suddenly, I was told, “Please Evangelist Matt, don’t come to the crusade ground. There are more than 100,000 people already there and the other religious parties are on the platform. They want to arrest you.” The reason they wanted to arrest us was that they were afraid of losing their influence in the city. But they didn’t have enough policemen to send away the big crowd. Instead, they surrounded our hotel. What did we do? We started to pray, “God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, God, Father of Jesus Christ, this city needs to be saved. The Bible says where two or three are gathered in your name, whatever they ask, You will give them. We bind the evil powers, and we release the power, the presence, and the breakthrough of God.”

After about two hours, when the crusade should have been finishing, we were still praying. Then we got another call and a knock on the door. The highest-ranking police officer was standing there with our contact person. He said, “Evangelist Matt, riots almost broke out at the crusade grounds because they were asking, ‘Where is the evangelist? We want to hear the good news about Jesus. Where is he?’ Riots almost broke out and the parties of the different religions were on the platform. We asked the Holy Spirit what to do. Then finally we got permission from the highest police officer who said that “You should go to the crusade grounds, stand on the platform, and ask the people to go home. Just don’t say anything about what religion you support.”

I made my way through the crowd while seventy people surrounded me like a shield. I was afraid the other religious parties might kill me. I was very young in age and I didn’t know what to do, but I knew to ask the Holy Spirit to lead me. If

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

you're an evangelist, is it important to be led by the Holy Spirit. I proceeded onto the platform, and they gave me the mic. They informed me that the religious leaders could give the orders to have me arrested, or worse, kill me.

The Lord clearly said to me in a loud voice, "Ask forgiveness for what the people from the West have done in the past in India. Bow down before the people, and as an act in the Spirit, wash their feet. I didn't have water with me. So, I bowed down and started to rub their feet and began to pray over them. This was not my idea, I was led by the Holy Spirit in a dangerous situation. At that point, the Holy Spirit began to fall upon the religious leaders. Then the Holy Spirit fell upon the crowd. One of the religious leaders said, "I don't know what's happening right now, but I feel such peace. Evangelist Matt, here take the mic and share for the next twenty-five minutes whatever you want to share."

I shared the ABCs of the gospel of Jesus Christ and I shared about the power of the Holy Spirit. That night we saw waves of God's power hovering over the crowd. Thousands of people from the other religions who lived in darkness, or were bound by evil spirits, were set free by the blood of Jesus and the power of the Holy Spirit.

## **SEEING THE HOLY SPIRIT IN THE SCRIPTURES**

One of the first things I realized, when the Lord called me into full-time evangelism, is how the book of Acts shows us the importance of being empowered by the Holy Spirit in order to fulfill the Great Commission. I was enthralled by every word of every chapter, it's an amazing book. Through the pages, you see the Holy Spirit at work through evangelists and how the gospel of Jesus Christ spread everywhere in a short time. Acts 1:8 is key, "But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."

However, we see the Old Testament prophets being shown the message as well, the Lord spoke clearly to them about God's Kingdom. The Great Commission is not only a New Testament idea, but it has always been God's heart to redeem

## **THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST**

humanity. Psalm 2:7-8, “I will proclaim the Lord’s decree: He said to me, ‘You are my son; today I have become your father. Ask me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession.’”

In other words, the Lord is giving us the earth. He’s giving us North Korea, He’s giving us the United States of America, He’s giving us Brazil—every continent and every nation...

Then, Psalm 22:27 says, “All the ends of the earth will remember and turn to the LORD, and all the families of the nations will bow down before him.” Notice it doesn’t say some nations, but ALL. That’s powerful!

Isaiah 45:22 says, “Turn to me and be saved, all you ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is no other.” This is an Old Testament exhortation. There has never been a different God who truly brings redemption—only God the Father, who sent His son Jesus. It is vitally important to know as an evangelist, that God’s dream, God’s vision, is to fulfill the Great Commission through you! He does this by empowering you with the Holy Spirit. Now is the time for the Church and the Evangelist to move out and fulfill these prophecies.

Looking again at the book of Acts, the Holy Spirit is mentioned sixty times. That’s incredible! We read that the gospel began to spread all across Asia and into Europe. Why? Because evangelists were full of the power of the Holy Spirit and didn’t keep that blessing for themselves. Instead, they let the river of God flow out of their belly, they preached the gospel message of Jesus Christ with signs and wonders following. They didn’t have the internet, there were no airplanes, and yet the gospel of Christ spread like wildfire. No one could stop it because of the power of the Holy Spirit within and upon the evangelists.

## **FOURTEEN WAYS THE HOLY SPIRIT WORKS IN THE LIFE OF AN EVANGELIST**

I see fourteen different ways the Holy Spirit works in the life of the evangelist in the book of Acts.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

1. The first way is empowerment for the proclamation of the gospel. Acts 4:8 tells us that Peter knew how to address the leaders and officials who were questioning him because he was “filled with the Holy Spirit.” He needed boldness because those leaders and officials were attempting to silence Peter’s proclamation. But Peter was filled with power and with boldness because of the Holy Spirit.
2. We also see powerful miracles. We see that the disciples were filled with the Spirit in Acts 2:4, “All of them were filled with the Holy Spirit and began to speak in other tongues as the Spirit enabled them.” Then we read in Acts 4:30, “Stretch out your hand to heal and perform signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus.” Acts 10:38 tells us, “...how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him.” Listen evangelist, this is your calling—healing all who are under the power of the devil as a result of being filled and baptized through the power of the Holy Spirit. We also read in Hebrews 2:3-4 about soul winning, “This salvation, which was first announced by the Lord, was confirmed to us by those who heard him. God also testified to it by signs, wonders and various miracles, and by gifts of the Holy Spirit distributed according to his will.”
3. The third thing you receive as an evangelist through the empowerment of the Holy Spirit is courage in the face of persecution. As an evangelist you probably will face persecution, but the Lord will give you the courage to glorify Him as you go up against it in His name. Again, in Acts 4:29-31, “Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness. Stretch out your hand to heal and perform signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus. After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the word of God boldly. For Peter and the others, there was strength in the middle of persecution.”

## THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST

4. We receive power for the church to grow in numbers. That's the reason I believe that the evangelist and the local church should always work together. We read Acts 9:3, "Then the church throughout Judea, Galilee and Samaria enjoyed a time of peace and was strengthened. Living in the fear of the Lord and encouraged by the Holy Spirit, it increased in numbers."
5. We receive wisdom to organize the church with leadership. We read in Acts 20:28, "Keep watch over yourselves and all the flock of which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers. Be shepherds of the church of God, which he bought with his own blood." Although I walk in the office of an evangelist, I'm also a pastor. I am both pastoring a church and leading the church to reach out to those who are not saved yet—both gifts should work together.
6. As an evangelist, you also receive powerful wisdom in contending for the gospel truth with unbelievers. This is the sixth point and highly needed. Acts 6:9-10, "Opposition arose, however, from members of the Synagogue of the Freedmen (as it was called)—Jews of Cyrene and Alexandria as well as the provinces of Cilicia and Asia—who began to argue with Stephen. But they could not stand up against the wisdom the Spirit gave him as he spoke." Stephen was an amazing evangelist. We read those who opposed him could not stand up against the Spirit's wisdom. Stephen was filled with the Spirit and because of that, those within the world's system could not argue with him.
7. You receive power for guidance in mission strategy and direction. I could talk about this for hours. Acts 8:29 tells us, "The Spirit told Philip, 'Go to that chariot and stay near it.'" And because Philip obeyed the Holy Spirit, he met a man from Ethiopia and the door to share the gospel to Africa was fully opened. We see again in Acts 13:2, "While they were worshiping the Lord and fasting, the Holy Spirit said, 'Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them.'" And because of that event, all of Europe heard the gospel of Jesus Christ. Also, we read about the Holy Spirit putting the brakes on in Acts 16:6-7, "Paul and his companions traveled throughout the region of Phrygia and Galatia, having been kept by the Holy

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Spirit from preaching the word in the province of Asia. When they came to the border of Mysia, they tried to enter Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus would not allow them to.” It’s so important as an evangelist that you are full of the Holy Spirit.

8. The Spirit of God provides the power for resolution of doctrinal differences. You will assuredly encounter doctrinal differences, but they don’t have to be a stumbling block. The Holy Spirit leads you in how to settle disputes if you ask. Acts 15:28 describes God’s leading in this challenge, “It seemed good to the Holy Spirit and to us not to burden you with anything beyond the following requirements.”
9. We are granted the power for taking bold steps in mission frontiers. Acts 10:19-20, “And while Peter was pondering the vision, the Spirit said to him, ‘Behold, three men are looking for you. Rise and go down and accompany them without hesitation, for I have sent them.’” Peter received that vision in order to reach the whole Gentile world.
10. We are given power for encouragement and even joy not just in enduring but triumphing through difficult trials—which are a given (see Acts 14:22, John 16:33, 1 Peter 2:9, 1 Thessalonians 3:3). The context for Acts 13:52 is in the midst of persecution, “And the disciples were filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit.” We all need to hear this because often, evangelists get discouraged. But fellowship with God and empowerment of the Holy Spirit gives us joy that strengthens us in every trial.
11. Power of *perseverance* for the evangelist is ours when it is needed. In my twenty-five years in evangelism, it pains me to say I have seen many evangelists quit because of difficult trials. Maybe they dealt with loneliness, rejection, or they were not understood and appreciated in their local church. Praise God we are now entering a new season where the church is embracing the evangelist. Many evangelists I know, who started with fire and passion, are doing something else. They simply didn’t know how to follow the Spirit when it came to navigating through their difficulties.

## THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST

From Acts 10 to Acts 20:22-23 we see Paul heading toward Jerusalem. He says this, “And now, behold, I am going to Jerusalem, constrained by the Spirit, not knowing what will happen to me there, except that the Holy Spirit testifies to me in every city that imprisonment and afflictions await me” (Acts 20:22-23, ESV). I minister in North Korea and it can be seriously challenging so I keep this verse about Paul in mind, “the Holy Spirit testifies to me in every city that imprisonment and afflictions await me.” I am not saying that every evangelist will face hardship and prison. But when I read the word, I see, in both the Old and New Testaments, that men and women of God, specifically evangelists, faced persecution. This helps me stay encouraged when things get difficult.

I’ve been in different situations where authorities tried to throw me in prison. I’ve been in different cities where other religious organizations came against us, or came against our crusades, breathing threats against us. I’ve been in the deep bush of Africa speaking to tribes from a different religion who tried to stone me. I’ve been in nations where there is no freedom to share the gospel of Jesus Christ. We’re going to face trials and that’s a key reason we need the Holy Spirit.

Laos is a closed nation and for a whopping seventy years it was not possible to hold gospel crusades and yet the Holy Spirit prompted me to go to Laos. I didn’t have the resources, I didn’t have the contacts, but I went and met a pastor who became a good friend. He is a very famous church leader but I cannot mention his name for security reasons but he opened up his church to me and I felt the Holy Spirit. In less than three days, his little church was packed. Outside, people were sitting on cars and fences but because of that, we attracted the attention of the government, which, I might add, was not pleased. The third night, while I was preaching about the Holy Spirit and the blood of Jesus, I saw more than half the police officers surround the little church. Then the Holy Spirit whispered to me and said, “Stop preaching. Lead the people to sing Amazing Grace.” So, that’s what we did, we obeyed the Spirit of God. While they were singing, the Holy Spirit led me to walk right through the crowd with the rest of my team and I walked through the big circle of police officers. It was like they didn’t see me. It was an incredible experience. I stepped into the car while the police were staring at the platform. I was discouraged as we took the plane home.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I cried out to God and said, “Lord, we almost got put in prison!” I was so afraid that I put all the underground church leaders in danger. I felt that I failed, but then the Holy Spirit said, “Thank you for being obedient, I’m going to open up a bigger door.” I thought that was impossible. But to make a long story short, three months later I got a phone call from Laos. “Evangelist Matt, can you please come back to our capital city? The government has allowed us to do a gospel festival!” I couldn’t believe my ears!

In faith, I went back three months later with a team with official permission to preach. On the first night, as I was preaching, the Holy Spirit told me clearly, “Matt, I want you to turn off the lights when you give the invitation to follow Jesus.” I have learned not to argue with the Holy Spirit, so, with 2,000 people in a government building, we shut off the lights. I think I shared the most powerful, three-minute gospel message of my life. Of course, I don’t know how many people raised their hands, but I believe there were hundreds.

Then came the second night. As I was readying myself to preach, my team brought to me members of the security guard who asked me to come to the green room. I was a little bit nervous, but I could see someone who must have been important standing in the room. He was surrounded by police officers. The man said, “Evangelist Matt, I gave the order to arrest you three months ago. I am the main police officer of this city. For many years I persecuted Christians all over the nation of Laos. But, when you turned off the lights, I felt freedom to raise up my hand and follow Jesus. I have never experienced what I felt next. I felt power, love, and peace. I want to know more about that experience.” And right there, we cried and then led him fully to Jesus Christ. I said, “Police Commander, are you willing to go with me hand in hand and sit with me in the first row?” He responded, “Yes, I’m willing to do that.”

Consider for a moment, the absolutely profound impact that had on the people in this closed nation as it slammed into the powers of darkness and opened their hearts, pouring in the light of truth through the Holy Spirit. The Christians were very tense being in the governmental building and the Laotians were also realistically in fear of being arrested. You could have heard a pin drop it was so

## THE LEADING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FOR THE EVANGELIST

quiet... And when I stood up to preach the gospel, the Holy Spirit fell upon two-and-a-half-thousand people. This is my Jesus!

12. Power to understand the Scriptures and to speak the truth has also been given to us. Acts 4:25, “You spoke by the Holy Spirit through the mouth of your servant, our father David: ‘Why do the nations rage and the peoples plot in vain?’” The Scriptures, both the Old and New Testaments, are full of the truth that Jesus wants to save the lost. The Holy Spirit will give you the ability to preach the truth as laid out in the Bible.
13. The Holy Spirit will embolden your prayers. Acts 4:31, “After they prayed, the place where they were meeting was shaken. And they were all filled with the Holy Spirit and spoke the Word of God boldly.” We know that before the Holy Spirit was poured out, the disciples were together in an upper-level room. They had the doors locked in fear for the Jews. They had encountered the risen Lord, but still had the doors locked. However, in the upper room, when they received the fire of the Holy Spirit, they spoke the word boldly.
14. When the Holy Spirit comes upon you as an evangelist, you receive power to live holy. Let power of Acts 5:9 speak to every evangelist and consider, are we willing for this kind of sign and wonder to be a part of our evangelistic ministry?! “Peter said to her, ‘How could you conspire to test the Spirit of the Lord? Listen! The feet of the men who buried your husband are at the door, and they will carry you out also.’” In this passage of Scripture, Ananias and Sapphira had lied to the Holy Spirit.

They did not live a holy life, and we all know what happened, they dropped dead. Sanctification is a work of the Holy Spirit. Personal sin greatly hinders our effectiveness in evangelism. The *Holy* Spirit was given to keep us holy—set apart from the world, the allure of the flesh, and cunning of the devil; we must hate sin. Paul speaks even more directly about the Spirit’s role in sanctification. In Romans 8:4 we read, “...in order that the righteous requirement of the law might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the flesh but according to the Spirit.” As evangelists we need to be reminded that, “...if you live according to

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

the flesh you will die, but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live. For all who are led by the Spirit of God are sons of God” (Romans 8:13-14).

These 14 points demonstrate the Spirit’s empowerment in equipping you to fulfill your ministry as an evangelist. I pray they encourage you and that you will receive all fourteen elements in your life to their fullest. The Holy Spirit wants to make you an effective evangelist in every way.

# **THE JOURNEY OF FAITH**

Nathan Morris

## **SYNOPSIS**

Nathan Morris masterfully explains why the Kingdom will be demonstrated through supernatural signs and wonders following the preaching of the word. He exhorts us to allow God to both put a demand on our faith as well as to grow us in the understanding that He will back up His word through the miraculous.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

After many years of running from God, Nathan Morris gave his life to Jesus Christ in 2002 when he had a life changing encounter with God's presence. God placed a passion in his heart to preach the gospel to the lost and to set the captives free. Initially, Nathan began preaching on the streets of England and local churches. During the first few years, many people began to travel from all parts of the United Kingdom to experience the tangible presence of God in his services. It became evident that Nathan would minister the gospel not only on the streets, but also to the masses. In 2006, Nathan launched "Shake the Nations Ministries" (STN). The first STN gospel campaigns were held in remote areas of Africa and India. In these gospel campaigns, the STN team witnessed thousands of souls say "Yes" to Jesus Christ in the first two years of the ministry. Numerous

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

documented miracles took place, with the blind, deaf, and crippled all testifying to their healing. For the past two decades, the ministry has traveled around the world bringing the good news of Jesus Christ to the nations and has had the privilege of watching God move as souls come to Jesus—the blind see, the deaf hear, and the lame walk!

For more info, visit: <https://shakethenations.com>

## THE JOURNEY OF FAITH

### THE BEGINNING

I am overwhelmed when I think of all that I have witnessed through the grace and goodness of God. It is an absolute privilege to watch the Holy Spirit at work. This was the cry of my heart when God called me to be an evangelist. I cried out to see the miracles of the Bible—for the blind to see, the deaf to hear, and the lame to walk.

I remember sitting around the table with the great man of God, a hero of mine, Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke. As he looked at me from across the table, he said, “Evangelist, whatever you preach Jesus to be, as long as it is the Word of God, that is what He will be in your meeting. If you preach Him to be the Savior, He will save. If you preach Him to be the healer, He will heal. If you preach Him to be the deliverer, He will deliver.” Right then and there, I said, “Lord, I am going to preach the whole thing,” and I began to believe God for the miraculous—to believe God to see mighty signs and wonders. It is a journey with the Holy Spirit. It is a journey that still challenges every part of me to step into that realm of faith with Him.

Early in my ministry, as I began to preach the gospel at campaigns, thousands would be in the field. I felt like such an amateur. To be honest with you, I didn’t know what I was doing, but I preached what the Holy Ghost gave me. As I learned to obey His voice, I began to pray for the sick and that was when I began to see miracles. I remember coming home and asking the Lord, “God, how is this happening?” The Holy Spirit spoke to me and said, “Son, when you preach the blood of Jesus, you unlock the Kingdom of Heaven, and all that Jesus is.”

### MANIFESTATION OF THE KINGDOM

As a believer, and certainly as an evangelist, you don’t need to know that God heals, you need to know that *He is healing itself*. You have been called to preach the gospel accompanied by miracles, signs, and wonders—miracles go hand in hand with the call of salvation. Jesus tells us in Matthew 10:7, “As you go, proclaim this message: ‘The kingdom of heaven has come near.’” Jesus said that

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

as you proclaim the gospel with urgency, “Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse those who have leprosy, drive out demons. Freely you have received; freely give” (Matthew 10:8). The Word, Himself, and the manifestation of that very Word are inescapably joined together.

“...because our gospel came to you not simply with words but also with power, with the Holy Spirit and deep conviction. You know how we lived among you for your sake” (1 Thessalonians 1:5). When you proclaim the Kingdom of God, it is both word and demonstration. Why? *Because God is not reasoned—He is revealed by the Holy Spirit.* That is how God comes to a person, solely by revealing Himself. And that is why the signs of the Kingdom need to be made manifest. When the Kingdom comes, His will is being done. When the Kingdom comes, it looks like something, it sounds like something, and it *is* something different altogether!

Look at the way Jesus responds to John the Baptizer’s disciples when they came to ask if He was the coming One or if they should look for another. I have thought many times how much Christ, the Son of God, could have just opened their eyes to a myriad of angels, or a fire could have spun around Him, and they would have fallen to their knees. But He didn’t, He pointed to the signs of the Kingdom! “Go back and report to John what you have seen and heard: The blind receive sight, the lame walk, those who have leprosy are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the good news is proclaimed to the poor” (Luke 7:22). These are the signs that take place when you preach the gospel! Jesus instructed them to not only listen to what they heard, but also to pay attention to what they saw! There is a manifestation of the Kingdom and that is why we must contend, and we must believe for the supernatural things of God to manifest in our ministries—this demands a journey of faith.

## THE BLUEPRINT

Looking back, as I preached the gospel and the sanctifying blood of Jesus Christ, miracles begin to manifest in my life, I began to see the miracles of the Bible. The Apostle Paul charged Timothy to, “Preach the word; be prepared in season and out of season; correct, rebuke and encourage—with great patience

## THE JOURNEY OF FAITH

and careful instruction” (2 Timothy 4:2). That word “charge” is the Greek word “diamarturomai.” It is a verb that literally means, *one has the legal right to witness, or to testify under oath*. When you proclaim the word and herald the gospel, you are not only preaching to the ears of men, you are preaching to principalities and powers, breaking open the ground as you proclaim the word. The Kingdom begins to manifest, and that is why preaching cannot not be replaced with performance, exposition, entertainment, doctrine, drama, theology, or with tricks! To preach the word is to be a vessel that is filled with the Spirit of God and powerfully herald divine truth as it thunders forth to its hearers!

The power is in the invisible and irresistible wind of the Spirit of Almighty God. I remember preaching one night and I said out loud to the people, “If God doesn’t heal you tonight...” Immediately the Holy Spirit smote my heart and said, “Stop making excuses!” At that moment, I was letting my unbelief show but glory to God, He was about to take me on a journey of faith. I apologized to the Lord, and then He encouraged me saying, “Son, you proclaim what I tell you to proclaim. I will look after my own Name.” At that moment, God demanded faith to rise up in me to believe for greater miracles than I had ever seen before!

I needed to apply, what I have come to believe and am convinced, is the biblical blueprint for every evangelist. It shows the intrinsic connection between the proclamation of the gospel and the faith that must be applied to release the Kingdom. In Mark 2, as Jesus began to teach inside a home, immediately many gathered so that there was no longer any room to receive them, not even near the door. What was Jesus doing? He was preaching the gospel to them! That is the key—you must preach the word. We cannot lose this generation to the emotional manifestation of the power of the Holy Spirit without the foundation and covering of the word! True revelation, if you want the transformational power of the Holy Spirit, is realizing that you must preach the unapologetic gospel of the Kingdom, you cannot compromise.

We must make the connection between the releasing of the word of God and the activation of faith. “Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word of God” (Romans 10:17 NKJV). As you step into the faith realm, God will take you



## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

from faith to faith and from glory to glory. Mark, Chapter 2, describes men that lowered their friend down from a hole they dug in the roof after they were unable to make it through the door due to the crowd, and they are this example; a perfect object lesson! When Jesus sees their faith, He forgives the sins of the man on the stretcher to the amazement of the crowd. When this action was questioned by the throng, He then heals the paralyzed man who arose and walked, to verify the spoken word that the Son of Man has the power on earth to forgive sins. The statement and the action were coupled to confirm His identity. As Jesus proclaimed the gospel, the applied faith of the men led to not only the healing of their friend, but also the revelation of the Son of Man.

## **THE FAITH REALM**

There is confidence in truly understanding that Jesus is not only our Savior, but He is also our healer. We must place a demand upon the gospel to see the deaf hear, the blind see, and the lame walk. Paul very clearly declares that this is the heart of God in his letter to the Ephesians. He desires that, "...the eyes of your heart may be enlightened in order that you may know the hope to which he has called you, the riches of his glorious inheritance in his holy people, and his incomparably great power for us who believe. That power is the same as the mighty strength" (Ephesians 1:18-19). I didn't know that our understanding had eyes but I do know that means that there is a realm of understanding through the Holy Spirit that God wants to open up to you right now—a whole new realm of His glory for your ministry and your life. To know the hope of His calling, the riches of His glory, and the greatness of His power means that there is revelation given so that the eyes of your understanding might be opened. That is what the Holy Spirit had to do and continues to do in my life—He opens my eyes!

One night after witnessing creative miracles, I said to the Lord, "That is truly incredible!" The Holy Spirit said to me, "Son, you haven't seen anything yet." I felt like God was saying, "I want to open the eyes of your understanding." My eyes had been opened and I was amazed at the creative miracles that happened right in front of me, but in God, there is always more. Do you have the hunger and the pursuit to continue to have the eyes of your understanding enlightened?

## THE JOURNEY OF FAITH

There is spiritual vision that the Lord will take us into when we truly pursue Him, He opens our eyes to be able to see the most beautiful of all... *Himself*.

Paul exhorts Timothy to help embed this reality. The Amplified translation translates 2 Timothy 1:12 so powerfully. It reads, "...for I know Him [and I am personally acquainted with Him] whom I have believed [with absolute trust and confidence in Him and in the truth of His deity] and I am persuaded [beyond any doubt] that He is able to guard that which I am entrusted to Him until that day [when I stand before Him]." I love this because to trust Him is to *know* His Word, which is *Him*! It is to trust that what God has said, He is able to complete and Paul had come to the place where his trust has now become his confidence. I began to learn that same confidence in God along my journey of Him using me to minister His healing to those in need.

## TRUST TO CONFIDENCE

There were times when I would pray and pray, I must have prayed for over 100 blind people. I preached that God would open blind eyes, therefore, I had to see the blind eyes open! The Holy Spirit spoke to me one day saying, "Son, if you pray for the first like you do for the last, and the last like you do for the first, I will show you My glory." I trusted that God could heal, but God wanted to take my trust and move it to a place of confidence. *He wanted me to believe before I saw as if I had already seen*. I trusted His word, but the journey was building the confidence in its reality. When you trust the Lord and God begins to fulfill His word, suddenly, that trust becomes confidence.

"This is the confidence we have in approaching God: that if we ask anything according to his will, he hears us." (1 John 5: 14). Knowing Him leads to trusting Him, which leads to the confidence in the history of the journey. This is a journey of faith, so, when we say, "yes" to Jesus and enter into salvation, we are given a measure of faith—the measure. We see this in the King James Version of the Bible, "For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith" (Romans 12:3).

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

I believe that God gives everyone the same measure of faith, however, what you do with that measure is what makes the difference.

### **THE MEASURE OF FAITH**

People often say to me, “I feel like I am called to preach the gospel, but I don’t know if I have the gifts of healings.” Here the person is referring to, 1 Corinthians 12:7-11, where Paul is speaking on the gifts of the Holy Spirit. In this context, the “gifts of healings” refer to moments where God will use you to do notable signs and wonders for His glory. Look at the story of Phillip in Acts 8:6-7, “When the crowds heard Philip and saw the signs he performed, they all paid close attention to what he said. For with shrieks, impure spirits came out of many, and many who were paralyzed or lame were healed.”

I remember going into regions of Kenya and seeing countless people writhing in agony on their deathbeds as they perished in the grip of AIDS. I watched in amazement as God broke the power of this dreaded disease and raised people up from the ravages of this horrific affliction. It was an incredible supernatural moment where the powers of eternity penetrated time and space and gifts of healings were released. There were other times when I had to place a demand on the measure of my faith as I laid hands on the sick. There is the assumption that we need the gifts of healings. No! There are special moments when this will happen. However, we need to establish the global reality that healing and laying hands on the sick, is for all believers when you proclaim the gospel. Miracles are made manifest because miracles go hand in hand with the good news of Jesus Christ—we must see the difference.

When I told the Lord that I wanted the gifts of healings, the Holy Spirit took me on a journey of faith. He said, “First, I must teach you how to use the measure in which you already possess.” There were times that I didn’t feel a tingle down my spine. There were times when I didn’t feel the glory of God or sense a change in the atmosphere. No, God was teaching me to use the measure of faith that I had been given. If you pray for one hundred blind people before you start seeing the miracles, then pray for 100 blind people—do not let your faith waiver. Suddenly,

## THE JOURNEY OF FAITH

I began to see a breakthrough and blind eyes began to open in meetings, frankly, I was more shocked that the people who were being healed!

Eventually, God began to use the measure of my faith as I went from faith to faith. Once you see God begin to move in miracles through you, what you once had to trust Him for, now becomes your confidence. If you talk to evangelists, they will tell you that 90 percent of the time, God will demand that you use your faith—the measure that God gave you at the point of salvation. As you work that faith, God begins to cause your faith to grow. The faith is in you, but you need the eyes of your understanding opened to make it made manifest. Evangelists, when God called you to preach the gospel, He already called you to have a miracle working ministry. Do not use the excuse, “I don’t think the Holy Spirit has given me the gifts of healings”—*every* believer is called to pray for the sick!

There will be times that you release gifts of healing in your ministry; times where the Lord give free rein to notable miracles. There will be miracles that cause whole regions to come to Christ, but first of all, hear me, God will take you on a journey of faith—you must grow in that faith! You learn to trust that whether you feel it or not, you know that the Word of God has taken root in your life. And as you sow into the realm of faith, God will cause your trust to become your confidence.

“Very truly I tell you, whoever believes in me will do the works I have been doing, and they will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the Father. And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. You may ask me for anything in my name, and I will do it (John 14:12-14). This is where the rubber meets the road. When Jesus says, “...whatever you ask in my name...” He uses the Greek word *aiteó* for “ask” in this passage. This word means to ask in the strongest possible manner — to command. This is not a polite request, this is your inheritance! It is asking because you are a son/daughter and heir of salvation! God wants to get you to the place where your faith begins to command sickness to leave—not just plead with it to go. It is a place of complete obedience to the Word!

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

### THE SHIFT

As your trust becomes your confidence, you begin to speak in a way that you have never spoken before. No wonder Peter said in the book of Acts, “In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk” (Acts 3:6). This was a new way of speaking. He was not asking in terminology that was common to the time; to be honest, it is not common in our day. He was not pleading, he stood in the authority of the name of Jesus Christ through the power of the Holy Spirit!

In the story of Elijah, we see as it is retold in James, “Elijah was a man with a nature like ours, and he prayed earnestly that it would not rain; and it did not rain on the land for three years and six months. And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth produced its fruit” (James 5:17-18). Elijah was praying, he had his head between his knees, crying out. He told Gehazi, his servant, “Go and look for the cloud. Go and look for rain.” Gehazi came back with a negative report, but Elijah didn’t pack up and go home. No. He placed a demand on his measure of faith. He said, “It’s going to rain!” He put his head down and prayed again. If you’re going to see a breakthrough in your ministry, you must be relentless. You must have a tenacity, a zeal that says, “I’m going to believe God!” When God sees that kind of faith, He causes it to grow exponentially developing it into true authority.

As evangelists, we must preach the word, and lay hands on the sick, the Holy Spirit will do the rest. We must be faithful to use the measure of faith that God has given us. Miracles can shake governments and bring sinners to their knees. I want to encourage every single one of you to use the measure of faith you have. Be faithful—lay hands on the sick, cast out devils, God will cause your trust in Him to become your confidence along this journey of faith. Rise up, mighty evangelist! The measure of faith that the Lord has given you will be used by God in you to do great exploits for the glory due His Name!

# **THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST**

Jean-Luc Trachsel

## **SYNOPSIS**

God is willing to equip you to reach the multitudes with one of the major keys to do so being healing. In this chapter, Evangelist Jean-Luc Trachsel teaches both the theological foundations of why we can be assured God will move when we pray for the sick and gives us practical insight on how to do so.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Jean-Luc Trachsel personally encountered Christ at the age of five, and from the earliest age God placed a strong calling on his life to share His word with demonstrations of power. His journey is one of an ordinary person, through whom God did extraordinary things simply because he made himself available to Him. Jean-Luc believes that nothing is impossible and actively works to bring unity among Christians as he proclaims the gospel to this generation with mercy and compassion. His sensitivity to the Spirit allows the manifestation of the supernatural with signs, miracles, healings, and salvation.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Visionary, entrepreneur, and business developer, Jean-Luc is the International Director of the International Association of Healing Ministries (IAHM) and part of the Core Team of Europe Shall Be Saved (ESBS). Together with Daniel Kolenda, he also launched and co-chaired the Global Evangelist Alliance (GEA) under the banner of Empowered21. An internationally recognized speaker, he travelled over the five continents to more than eighty nations and shared the gospel in all kinds of situations and circumstances. Jean-Luc leads his ministry with enthusiasm, passion, and wisdom. In his autobiography “dans les coulisses d’un miracle” he explains with authenticity how he lives the power of God in his daily life, during meetings or events. With humility, he also shares how God carried him through a difficult two-year break, after suffering from burn-out.

For more info, visit: <https://healing-ministries.org>

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

**C**an you imagine Jesus choosing His disciples knowing that He would give them authority to do great things? “When Jesus had called the Twelve together, He gave them power and authority to drive out all demons and to cure diseases, and He sent them out to proclaim the Kingdom of God and to heal the sick” (Luke 9:1-2). Notice this authority was not given so they could stay at home, but rather it was directly connected to the Great Commission. Jesus sent them out in this authority so that they might preach the gospel and heal the sick.

It is amazing what Jesus did with His original disciples, but the wonderful thing is that before Jesus ascended to the Father, He gave us this mandate as well. “Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison, it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well” (Mark 16:16-18). The Great Commission is not only for the specialists—those in fulltime ministry, it’s for every believer. But it applies especially to those who walk in the office of the evangelist.

God is willing to equip you to reach the multitudes and one of the major keys to evangelism is healing. I have lived in Europe for many years, and yes, it can be difficult to talk about Jesus in Europe, but things are changing. It is God’s will that Europe would be saved, and He is moving in many regions throughout the European community. Be that as it may, His power is on display and He is not limited by the geographical area or the cultural climate no matter what continent you find yourself on. God is willing to use you in the same way that Jesus was used when He walked the earth.

Obviously, Jesus preached the message of the Kingdom, but if we look at the four Gospels as a whole, we see that 40 percent of the time, Jesus also healed the sick—God wants to equip you to heal the sick as well. Healing is not just a tool for evangelism, it’s actually the manifestation of the compassion and the love of God Himself. He wants to take care of people who are hurt, suffering, and who have pain—especially regarding illnesses. The great news is that Jesus gives us



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

the same authority and power that He gave to the disciples. He's willing to give it to you so that you can be an efficient evangelist who bears much fruit. God chose you, He is establishing you, and He wants you to go and bear much fruit in Jesus's name.

Seeing healings manifest in ministry was a journey for me as my background is from the Brethren Church. I'm grateful for what I received in this denomination—their priority is to teach that faith comes from knowing the written Word. And because I was taught that it is my bedrock in the faith, I still study the Scriptures diligently—it's a priority and my roots.

As I studied the Bible, I could see that Jesus put an emphasis on healing. We cannot bring the gospel with efficiency without focusing on Jesus. It's fantastic that God called you to be an evangelist; to bring the gospel, to bring hope, to bring salvation to this generation—but in doing so, you cannot offer people a partial Jesus. You need to bring the whole Jesus who is the Savior, the Deliverer, but also the Healer.

I gave my life to Jesus at the age of five and by the age of six, I was baptized with the Holy Spirit and fire. I was consumed by a hunger; a thirst regarding Jesus—at the same time, however, I enjoyed reading books on revival, especially the biographies of people who made a great impact. Today, if you come to my house, you will discover hundreds upon hundreds of books, CDs, cassettes, and videos exploring the lives of those who made a difference in their generation.

Some you may never have heard of, but others are very well known. Names like John G. Lake, Kathryn Kuhlman, A.A. Allen, or Jack Coe. As I studied their lives, I had a hunger to do the same things. I went to college at Oral Roberts University and asked for the key to a private prayer room—which I went to every day, praying for hours. Of course, I also had school, but when I was not in class, I would fast and pray.

I prayed, “Lord God, in the past, You moved in powerful ways, You healed sick people... I want to be like You, Jesus, I don't want to be just a little bit like You,

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

I want the whole Jesus. May that take place in me—move through me in power to heal the sick and to cast out demons.” I had a deep hunger regarding healing.

One day the Lord said, “Go back to the Bible, and I will release what I carry. I will give you what I gave to those before you.” So, I started reading the Bible differently with the help of the Holy Spirit and discovered how when Jesus was on the earth He moved with compassion and took time to pray for the sick.

From that time on I said, “Lord God, since you called me to be an evangelist, I want to have your compassionate heart with the help of the Holy Spirit. I promise You that in every meeting, every place I go, I will make it a priority to pray for those who are suffering, for those who are sick. And from that day forward, when I preached, when I led a sales group, or when I shared the gospel in the street, I made it a major priority in my life—I always allowed the Holy Spirit to move in power and to heal the sick.

I also connected with some powerful healing ministries where I learned a great deal. To this day I am grateful for all the people who became my friends—people like Benny Hinn and others who were mightily used of God. I also had the privilege of spending time with Dr. Oral Roberts and was so eager to learn from him that it was impossible to have all my questions answered. Still, I’m sure that God heals and is the same yesterday, today, and forever. What He has done in the past, He is willing to do today—through you. I also learned through the ministry of Reinhard Bonnke as I saw how he preached the gospel and always gave place to pray for the sick.

Now in Switzerland, where I am located, the gospel has spread, and we have seen revival. A few years ago, however, it was difficult without many people being saved in Europe. Only four percent of the population in Switzerland are born-again which translates to a whopping 96 percent people who are not saved yet. That’s the reason I want to give my life to preach the gospel and see a manifestation of the Kingdom of Heaven through the demonstration of power.

My first real first crusade or evangelistic meeting was a healing meeting. I rented the city hall in the small village where I lived. In the afternoons, I knocked on

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

every door to tell them that Jesus wanted to save them and heal the sick. About eighty people came to the first meeting. That was huge for me.

Jesus did save souls that night and healed those who were sick. And, get this, there is fruit from that first meeting that can be seen to this day. Some people are still involved in the local church which is fantastic, we then continued to have healing meetings and prayed for the sick. People came, not because they wanted Jesus, they didn't know about Jesus other than what they learned through religion. Most of them were sick and when you give people the possibility to meet the real Jesus who wants to take care of them by healing their bodies, they become open to experiencing the power of the Holy Spirit. I have seen so many healings—thousands of healings, I give all the glory to God.

You know, I've not seen everybody getting healed, still, I believe what the Bible says—we have the authority and the power to heal all disease. However, I'm in the process of learning and because of that, let me share some practical knowledge on healing. These principles work whether face-to-face with someone all alone, or in front of a massive crowd of hundreds of thousands of people—the principles are exactly the same. I am especially careful not to float a doctrine and assert something like, "Here are five keys to having a successful healing ministry..." The reality is that there's no formula, sometimes Jesus works one way, sometimes it's different. But I have learned some principles on how I'm moving in the gift of healing as an evangelist.

First, Exodus 15:26 says, "...for I am the Lord, who heals you." When I'm in front of someone who is sick, whether in the hospital or on the stage, the first thing I say is "God is the Healer—Jehovah Rapha." It is His very character, it's not that He has healing to give, He is the Healer... So, I turn my eyes to God, the Healer and I worship Him. I adore Him. I say, "God, You are the Almighty God. You are the Creator. You are the King of Kings, the Lord of Lords, but also You are the Healer." I concentrate myself by putting my faith, my attitude, my spirit, and my eyes upon God who is the Healer.

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

Secondly, I put my faith in the solid foundation of the gospel message. We read in Isaiah 53:5, “But he was pierced for our transgressions, he was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was on him, and by his wounds we are healed.” Salvation is the greatest miracle! First of all, as evangelists we need to preach Jesus the Savior, the first priority of Jesus is to save this lost generation. Every human being needs a Savior and the greatest and the only Savior is Jesus—He bore the cross for our sin and endured that same cross for our sickness as well. That’s why when I’m in front of sick people, I know I stand on a legal, spiritual foundation because Jesus was wounded for our transgressions. He was crushed for our iniquities; the punishment that brought us peace was on him,

I see Jesus and I look at the cross, not only when I’m in front of a big crowd, but every time. Sometimes I’m in a restaurant and I know I’m supposed to pray for the sick, by the way, I always ask the Holy Spirit, “What do You want to do today?” Many times, He responds with, “I want to heal this person or that one.” He will also give me words of knowledge. These are like keys that open people’s hearts to Jesus, they are shocked that God knows their situation and cares. Most of the time, people accept prayer whether it’s in an airport, on the street, or in a big crowd.

Third, healing is not just for charismatic people, it is an ingredient of the Kingdom of Heaven, where the King is willing to invade the lives of people, regions, cities, and even continents. Luke 10:9 reads, “Heal the sick who are there and tell them, ‘The kingdom of God has come near to you.’” My friend, when you pray for the sick and when you bring the healing power of Jesus, you are bringing the Kingdom of Heaven to earth. By the way, healing is not only physical, but God is also the healer of our emotions, our spirit, and our body—He heals us completely.

Jesus never changes. He is “the same yesterday, today, and forever” (Hebrews 13:8). He wants to open deaf ears, He wants to open blind eyes, He wants to heal those who are suffering from AIDS... God is the healer of all afflictions—we are the ones who bring that healing, bring the Kingdom of Heaven to those in need of Jesus.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Fourth, in Matthew 21:21-22, “And Jesus answered then, Jesus replied, “Truly I tell you, if you have faith and do not doubt, not only can you do what was done to the fig tree, but also you can say to this mountain, ‘Go, throw yourself into the sea,’ and it will be done. If you believe, you will receive whatever you ask for in prayer.”

You can pray for anything and if you have faith, it will be received—this includes healing. You can pray for anyone suffering from deadly diseases like cancer or AIDS to be healed completely and if you pray in faith, the Lord will respond... Again, John 11:40 reads, “Then Jesus said, ‘Did I not tell you that if you believe, you will see the glory of God?’” The key ingredient for being effective as an evangelist is faith—especially if you want to see fruit such as healing.

The fifth principle: Follow the direction of the Holy Spirit. We read in Zechariah 4:6, “‘...Not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit,’ says the Lord Almighty.” We need to partner with the Holy Spirit when we pray for healing. He will give you the wisdom to know what to say and what to do. Sometimes God has a specific way He wants someone to experience His healing—He may give you just the right words at a precise moment for someone. Jesus Himself healed people in different ways. In fact, once, He spit in the dirt and put the mud on the eyes of a blind man, then He instructed him to wash in the river. (John 9:6-7). If we follow the leading of the Holy Spirit, He will give you specific instructions.

I will never forget this one meeting in France. There was a huge crowd, but God highlighted someone on the seventh row who was dying of cancer. I asked the Lord, “How do you want to heal this person?” I began to speak to the crowd, “Is there someone on the seventh row who has cancer?” Some people bent down and picked up a man lying on the floor because he was unable to sit in the chair. They had brought him to the crusade directly from the hospital. He only had a few days to live.

I instructed them to bring him to the front. The Holy Spirit told me, “Take this potted plant on the floor, take out the flowers, and pour the water on the man. I went to the leading pastor, and said, “My friend, the Lord is asking me to do

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

something seemingly a bit crazy.” The pastor gave me permission and I returned to the stage. I said to the man needing healing, “The Lord has asked me to do something special for you.” He replied, “Do whatever you want. I need a miracle. Do what the Lord tells you.”

So, I told him, “The Lord asked me to pour this water on you. I believe it’s going to be a point of contact between my faith and the power of God who brought Jesus on the cross to die for our sins and illnesses. By His stripes, we are healed. This healing is available to you and the Kingdom of God will invade your body.” I took the water and poured it on him. Instantly, the strength of God came upon this man and color came back into his face. He was completely healed! A few months later, I received a letter from the Emir who ran the hospital. The medical doctors that treated that man told me he had been completely healed.

Healing is not about the techniques we use. But we must be willing to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit. Imagine spitting in the mud like Jesus did and seeing the blind man healed. We don’t need gimmicks; we want the real power of God. However, He will ask you to do things that connect your faith to that power, it’s not automatic.

This power needs to flow through you like Jesus. When Jesus was in the midst of a crowd, a lady who was dying from a blood problem, reached out and touched the hem of His robe. Power came out of Jesus to heal her, it’s exactly the same with us—we have the same power as Jesus through the Holy Spirit.

Jesus did His part with regard to healing by paying the price, He gave His own life so that we might be healed. Now, we must do our part, we must preach that God is the Healer—He didn’t change. We just need to allow Him to move through us with healing power whether it’s for the multitudes or the person in front of us.

Here are a few practical ways God facilitates healing. One way, of course, is to lay hands on the one needing to be healed. Most of the time I lay hands on the sick. Mark 16:18 assures us that, “...they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well.”

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Recently I was in a restaurant and through the Spirit, I could see that a man had major knee trouble. I approached him and told him that I was a Christian, he informed me he didn't believe in God. I said, "I can prove to you that He exists, can I lay my hands on you?" He agreed and I laid my hands on him, saying boldly, "God you are the Healer. Through the stripes on your back there is healing. Now by faith, I receive it. Release Your power to create a new knee." In that moment, we heard the knee crack, and the man could feel that nerves, muscle, and even bones were being recreated. God can recreate and heal instantly. It was a miracle! He didn't just receive the pain subsiding. He received a brand-new knee and it happened right there in the restaurant.

The atmosphere of heaven is with us through the presence of the Holy Spirit. We have an open heaven because Jesus paid the price. When we go to any place, we bring the Kingdom of Heaven with us. We can lay our hands on anyone, anywhere and see healing take place.

I have so many testimonies of people getting healed. One time, we rented a stadium in France. Thousands of people were there. The Lord instructed me to ask everyone to call a person they knew who was sick. They all bought into it and lifted their cell phones so the ones they called could hear the preaching. I told them that Jesus is the Healer, I preached the gospel very shortly and then prayed, "I release the power of God through these cell phones to heal the sick." I had to leave the meeting quickly to catch a flight. Somebody ran after me trying to get my attention, but the people with me told him I was in a hurry. But this man was so insistent that I made time for him, and he said, "My brother-in-law is in the hospital, his father was dying and in a full coma. I called them and they put the phone close to his bed. When you prayed, the power of God hit him. He is completely healed!" He held up the phone and continued, "He wants to tell you, thank you!" I took the phone, and the man said to me, "Thank you! I was about to die, but you took authority over the spirit of death. I heard it in my spirit and woke up. Then the power of God hit me. I'm completely healed." A few weeks later, they wrote me a letter with a confirmation from the hospital. He had left the hospital twenty-four hours after I prayed for him with a clean bill of health.

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

Many times, if I'm being honest, I don't know what to do in certain situations. I have faith that God can heal, but what is needed is the spiritual gift of faith to be stirred up within. One time, I was on the island of Guadeloupe and we rented a large outdoor stadium. It was crowded, but suddenly the electricity stopped—at that point I felt the gift of faith rise up inside of me and I saw a light, it was the Holy Spirit. I see this light often when I pray for people through the leading of the Holy Spirit. Supernatural signs and wonders began manifesting and I followed the light with my eyes into the crowd, I saw a man who was totally paralyzed. I commanded him to come out of his wheelchair and receive his healing. I had no electricity or musicians, I just moved in the power of God in the gift of faith, as the man stood up, he was healed. Then hundreds of people received healing in the same way. Without electricity, without a sound system, without creating any kind of atmosphere, except the atmosphere of heaven. In heaven there is no sickness—there is only peace, joy, and abundance.

Remember, there is not a certain technique to healing, you simply need a point of contact—Oral Roberts is the one who taught me that truth. One time, a hospitalized man in Lesotho was dying of prostate cancer, I wrote him a letter and as I was about to seal the envelope, I laid my hands on it and released the anointing. The moment he opened the letter, the power of God hit him, and he was completely healed.

Sometimes the point of contact can be your shadow, the same power and authority that was upon the disciples is the same power and authority that God gives you and me. I remember being in another city where the place was packed with people. The Lord told me that forty people were suffering from stomach cancer. The Holy Spirit told me, "Ask them to come up and pass through your shadow. I said, "Lord, I cannot do that. They would think I'm proud." The Lord responded, "That's the way I want to heal tonight. It is the key to their healing."

Regarding healing, it is important to simply obey the Lord. If you obey, you will see the manifestation of God. So, I asked for a light to be shown over me so that I could cast my shadow. I called for the forty people with stomach issues to come forward. Forty-two came—almost all of them instantly received healing.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

One lady had a tumor disappear instantly, another person was losing blood from trouble in their intestines. They were instantly healed as they passed through my shadow. What is my shadow—nothing, except a point of contact for the power of God to meet with the person who needs healing.

Sometimes we pray and release seeds of healing—some people say we need to go to the outermost parts of the world to see healing but I see healing in the region in which I live... God sent me to Europe so, I'm always praying for the sick and I see many healings in the place that I live. In Zurich, I was brought to a man who had been crippled since birth. He had never walked and was born that way. I prayed for him, but nothing happened. I prayed again. The third time nothing happened. But I released the seed of healing, when you preach that God is the Healer, you release a seed—this will manifest fruit. And that's exactly what happened. I released him and said, "My friend, I have prayed for you. We bless you and expect you to receive your miracle." During the night, as he was sleeping, the power of God started to move on his hips. His bones started to crackle which woke him up, he stood up and found himself completely healed. Switzerland is home to some of the best doctors and hospitals in the world but the very best medical doctor is Jesus, Himself, that man was actually the nephew of a very well-known president of a nation.

The Holy Spirit gives us the gift of healing, but He also gives us the gift of miracles. There is a new generation, like you, who has been chosen by God to walk fully in the power of the Holy Spirit—this includes the gift of performing miracles.

Once in Avenal, the Lord said, "Go to a certain room, twelve floors up, and sit in the third chair. Someone has lost their sense of smell and taste, I want you to release the healing." That person was instantly healed! They bought an orange to test it out and it tasted fantastic, then the Lord said, "Now let me teach you how to do a miracle. I am going to put on you the authority to do a miracle, just like a doctor would put on his white medical coat. Now see that lady? Create the nerve." I told her, "Lady, through the power of God, I'm going to recreate your nerve."

## THE GIFT OF HEALING AND THE EVANGELIST

She started to cry and said, “I had an accident years ago, the nerve in my neck was destroyed. I’m not able to move correctly and I have terrible pain. Through the power of the Holy Spirit this nurse received a recreated nerve in her neck—I felt it. Her neck was loosed, and she was pain-free. A few months later, I received a copy of her MRI and this lady’s testimony. She had been totally healed and it was confirmed by science that a new nerve has been created.

A word of knowledge is a powerful tool to help people receive healing. When I was in Paris, the Holy Spirit gave me a word of knowledge about a girl named Martine. I said to her, “Your brain tumor is dying right now.” Come to find out, she did have a large tumor in her brain. She went to the hospital, and they did an MRI. Instead of a tumor, there was now a hole. It was a miracle. The tumor had disappeared, but her brain was not affected. God gets all the glory!

My heart burns for Europe, but I have the heart for this generation, that’s the reason I travel the world. I’ve been to more than ninety countries—I’ve seen God’s power move everywhere. So, once, I was invited to go to the Olympic Stadium in Karachi, Pakistan. I was excited because I like big crowds. But the Lord said, “Don’t go to the Olympic stadium, start small.” I was shocked because God loves the multitudes but I obeyed—we started a small meeting outside the city.

400 people were healed the first night, the second night, thousands of people came and many were healed. It was absolutely powerful! As the crowd continued to grow on the third night, the mayor of Karachi and the minister of that country came knocking on my door. They said, “Mr. Trachsel, we heard that you are performing miracles.” Of course, it’s Jesus, not me, but they said, “We want to invite you to come to downtown Karachi.” They blocked off the main streets in downtown Karachi and put the stage in the middle. When I arrived, there were already a multitude of people there. The chief of the Muslim secret police was dying from cancer—I touched him revealing that he was there, but in front of everyone, he gave his life to Jesus.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

On the same stage, the wife of a pastor had a breast tumor, she actually left the hospital with her breast bleeding and full of water. The Lord touched her, and instantly recreated her breast with new skin and new cells, it was a powerful miracle and her husband testified the next day. But one I will never forget was when I saw someone who had been born with their hips facing the opposite direction. Both legs were hanging on their shoulders. He had dry hands and was nude. When I saw him, I was moved with compassion.

I spent time with him. I used all the techniques I knew that might cast out the demonic spirit. Demons are sometimes what's behind sickness but nothing was working so, instead, I worshipped Jesus and laid hands on him. I released faith—the word of peace, it was not working! After spending time with this person, I said to the crowd, “I did my best. Now I have to let God do His.”

I then began to preach again when suddenly the heavens opened and I felt someone touching my bones and at the same time this same man was there. The crowd had lifted him up. He was healed and he began to praise God. It was a huge miracle, I was shocked and the crowd jumped onto the stage trying to touch me. The police and the army had to rescue me to save my life from the crowd. But as they were touching me, I saw miracles happen all over.

I'll conclude with this, God is willing to use you the same way as Jesus—with a demonstration of power. Open your spirit; if you are willing to move like Jesus with compassion to preach the gospel, but also to cast out demons with authority, and to heal the sick with the power. Even as you read this, lift your hands, open your spirit, and pray, “Lord Jesus, you are the same yesterday, today, and forever. Move throughout me to bring your love with a demonstration of power to this generation.” He wants to move in power through you!

# **THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST**

Rubens Cunha

## **SYNOPSIS**

Rubens Cunha is a powerful evangelist from Brazil and has witnessed God do miracles in many nations around the world. He reveals eight specific ways you can experience tangible miracles in your evangelistic ministry. It starts with an understanding of the gospel, and the Great Commission, and continues knowing that Jesus will back up His message of hope with miraculous signs and wonders.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Rubens Cunha is a Brazilian born missionary, evangelist, author, and international speaker who has led hundreds of thousands to Christ around the world through massive evangelistic campaigns. His global evangelistic ministry is marked by an impressive healing anointing after the model of Jesus—proclamation and demonstration of the salvation message with signs and wonders. Many have received miraculous healings at these events, but even more importantly, multitudes have experienced salvation and peace through Jesus Christ. In his campaigns, Rubens boldly proclaims that Jesus Christ is the same every day,

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

everywhere, and for everyone (Hebrews 13:8). Rubens holds a Bachelor of Theology degree and a postgraduate degree in New Testament Theology. He is also a graduate of the Haggai Institute in Maui, Hawaii, and President of Global Gospel Action.

For more info, visit: <https://www.gga.global>

## THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST

In this chapter, I want to write to you about the miraculous signs that follow the Spirit-filled evangelist. I have been travelling around the world for more than twenty years. God has given me the grace to see wonderful miracles, wonderful signs and wonders. In this chapter, I will share eight miracle principles to help you experience God's miracle-working power in your life and in your ministry. Let's start with the Great Commission Jesus gave His church.

Jesus said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to all creation. Whoever believes and is baptized will be saved, but whoever does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will accompany those who believe: In My name, they will drive out demons; they will speak in new tongues; they will pick up snakes with their hands; and when they drink deadly poison it will not hurt them at all; they will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well" (Mark 16:15-18).

This is the Great Commission Jesus gave His church to proclaim the gospel to all the world. It's amazing to see here, Jesus also commissions His church to proclaim His miracle working power. He commissions us to heal the sick, to cast out demons, to operate in signs and wonders. This means that the miraculous is an integral part of the Great Commission. I remember once in a crusade in the nation of Ethiopia, we had a woman that came to the event. She was paralyzed from her waist down. She had no movements in her legs. All she could do was to drag herself through the dusty streets of the village where she lived. She had no hope for healing and the doctors told her they no longer could help her. But she heard about the crusade that was coming to town and her heart was filled with faith—she believed Jesus was going to heal her.

I did not know she was there, but Jesus knew her by name, He knew she was at that crusade looking for Him. When the time for prayer came, I said, "In the name of Jesus, do now what you could not do before. If you couldn't walk, in Jesus' name stand up and walk." In that moment, that woman by faith, started to push her body up and the power of God touched her. She felt something like electricity, and she stood up on her feet. She realized she was healed and started to shout for joy, running back and forth. She ran through the crusade grounds

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

and then came to the platform. There was so much celebration in that place! She wept for joy, she danced, that wonderful miracle brought on a great breakthrough for the entire crusade.

When people saw her healed, their faith was raised. We had many other extraordinary miracles, and thousands were saved. Friends, signs and wonders will follow the preaching of the gospel. We can be sure because the Bible says that, “Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever” (Hebrews 13:8).

## **MIRACLES AND THE EARLY CHURCH**

This means that His power didn’t change, His love didn’t change. The same Jesus that healed people two thousand years ago, here in this earth, is still healing people now. Miracles are part of the Great Commission. Every time Jesus shared the gospel, miracles took place. Miracles also occurred beyond his death and resurrection. The early church proclaimed the gospel. They engaged in evangelism with signs and wonders following. In Acts Chapter 5, there was great growth in the church in Jerusalem. The Bible connects that growth with the signs and wonders that took place through the apostles.

In Acts, Chapter 8, Phillip the Evangelist went down to a city in Samaria. The people listened carefully to what he had to say because they saw the miracles. They saw when Phillip cast out the demons. They saw when the lame and the paralyzed could walk.

In Acts 19, we read that God did extraordinary miracles through the hands of Paul in the ancient city of Ephesus. Because of that, a great revival spread to the entire region. Even beyond the first generation of disciples, many scholars affirm that the miracles were the main reason for the explosive growth of the church in the first three centuries. Miracles follow evangelism in presenting the gospel, miracles followed evangelism in the early church, and miracles follow evangelism today.

## THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST

### EIGHT PRINCIPLES FOR EVANGELISM

Take these principles to heart. Pray about what you are about to read. Practice everything, I share with you. If you do, you will move to a new level of experience with signs and wonders.

**1. Understand that you are not alone:** The following Bible verse changed my life and ministry. When I read this, and the Lord spoke to me, and I was never the same. It's found in Mark 16:20, "Then the disciples went out and preached everywhere, and the Lord worked with them and confirmed His word by the signs that accompanied it." This verse is so powerful. It is said right after Jesus gave the Great Commission to His church. There are many powerful truths to learn in this verse. First, we learn that you are never alone when you share the gospel. The Bible says that Jesus worked with the disciples. He is the same, He hasn't changed, you are a disciple too. When you preach the gospel, Jesus works with you confirming His message with signs and wonders. He is the one who does the healing. It's a divine co-operation. You do the talking. You go to pray, but He does the healing. That takes the responsibility off your shoulders. This verse teaches us that we are not the ones responsible to heal people—it's Jesus. You preach the gospel, and He will do the healing. People are not healed because of our prayers, or because of our holiness. No, people are healed because Jesus died 2,000 years ago on the cross and he rose on the third day.

Please don't misunderstand me—a life given to prayer is important, leading a life of holiness and integrity is vital for your life and your ministry. But the miracles are not caused by our prayers. They are caused by the redemptive work of Christ. We are not the healers—Jesus is the healer, He works through us to bless people through signs and wonders.

We learn here also that Jesus is committed to confirming the message of the gospel. The Bible says that He worked with the disciples confirming the Word. Jesus will confirm the message of salvation. Funny stories or testimonies don't confirm the message. They have their place, but Jesus Himself is committed to confirm the gospel. The story of how God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, Jesus to us; that He took upon Himself our sins; died on the



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

cross and rose on the third day; and now we all can become children—this is the gospel that Jesus will confirm. This is the message that is the heart and soul of evangelistic ministry. It's also why as evangelists we need to resist the temptation to complicate or add to the simple message of the gospel. You can be creative as you are preparing your message, but never deviate from the gospel. That's the message the Holy Spirit will empower, that's the message that works miracles.

**2. Pray with Expectant Faith:** “And the prayer offered in faith will make the sick person well; the Lord will raise them up. If they have sinned, they will be forgiven” (James 5:15). This is very clear—if we are going to pray for the sick, we need to pray with faith. Know that it's not the lengthiest prayer or the loudest prayer that will bring healing. It's the prayer offered in faith. When you pray for miracles, you need to be filled with the confidence that God will answer your prayer with signs and wonders.

“Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Romans 10:17 NKJV). The foundation of biblical faith is the Word of God. You must build your faith in the area of healing. Study the Scriptures that talk about healing, about miracles—get educated in this subject and build your faith. Also, build the faith of the people who you pray for by teaching them healing principles from the Bible.

The Scriptures tell us, very clearly, how many miracles in the New Testament took place as a response to faith. A great example is in the Book of Mark, Chapter 5, where we read the story of the woman with the issue of blood. That woman had suffered for twelve years, but, as she touched Jesus' clothes, power came out of Him and the woman was healed. It's beautiful to see that she was sure that she was going to be healed even before she touched Jesus' clothes. “... she thought, if I just touch His clothes, I will be healed” (Mark 5:28). She knew it in her heart—that's faith.

I have seen thousands upon thousands of people healed in our campaigns. Many times, I hear testimonies like this woman with the issue of blood. These are testimonies of people who share about how assured they were of receiving a

## THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST

miracle, even before we prayed. As a matter of fact, it's very common that people receive miracles even before the prayer because their hearts are so filled with faith. If you want to see miracles, pray with expectant faith. Build your faith in the area of miracles by studying Scripture, and also build the faith of the people you pray for by teaching biblical principles in this area.

**3. Ask God for a Miracle:** “Very truly I tell you, My Father will give you whatever you ask in My name” (John 16:23). Prayer is an extraordinary privilege, through prayer, we come into fellowship with the Father. We can listen to His plans for our lives and align ourselves with His will.

The story of the daughter of Jairus in Mark 5, is a beautiful example of being healed as a response to prayer. Jairus was the principal of the synagogue in Capernaum and his daughter was so sick she was about to die. Jairus came to Jesus and presented before Him a prayer request, “My little daughter is dying. Please come and put your hands on her so that she will be healed and live” (Mark 5:23). Jesus followed the man through the streets of Capernaum. But, on the way they were held up. They had a divine interruption, which was when the miracle of the woman with the issue of blood took place. This miracle delayed them for a moment. When Jesus finally got to the house of Jairus, the girl was already dead. But that did not stop the Lord, He came into that house and raised the girl from the dead. The people were astonished, and they glorified God—He answered that prayer for miracles.

We also see in the Gospel of Mark the story of a blind Bartimaeus. Because Bartimaeus was born completely blind, he was a beggar. When he heard Jesus coming down the road of Jericho, he cried out, “Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!” (Mark 10:47). Jesus stopped and told the people to bring the blind man to Him. But He did not heal him until he answered one question, “‘What do you want Me to do for you?’ Jesus asked him” (Mark 10:51). Jesus gave that man the opportunity to present a petition before the King of kings. “The blind man said, ‘Rabbi, I wanted to see’” (Mark 10:51). When he spoke those words, Jesus healed him. The Bible says that Bartimaeus started to follow Jesus. By the way, that is the greatest miracle in the story—the fact that he followed the Lord.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Jesus still answers prayers and He still asks people, “What do you want Me to do for you?” (Which by the way, is a great title for an evangelistic message). When you are praying, when you are preaching, when you’re doing evangelism, ask God to do miracles and your prayers will be answered.

**4. The Prayer of Command:** We’ve talked about making requests to God for miracles, but this is an interesting observation. Most of the miracles that took place in the New Testament, performed by either Jesus or the apostles, were not the result of a prayer request. They were the result of a prayer of command—words of authority spoken to change a circumstance.

A beautiful example of this is found in Matthew 12:13. Jesus healed the man with the withered hand by saying, “Stretch out your hand.” He gave a word of command, speaking with authority when he said, “Stretch out your hand.” When Peter healed the paralyzed man, who was at the temple gate, he said, “In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk.” (Acts 3:6). He spoke with authority! We see it again as Paul ministers to a paralyzed man in the city of Lystra. This man had been paralyzed from birth. When Paul saw that he had the faith to be healed, he released his spoken word of command. Paul gave him a mandate and demanded, “Stand up on your feet!” (Acts 14:10)—and the man was healed.

Friends, we have the authority of the name of “Jesus!” This was the most commonly used method of healing in the New Testament. Unfortunately, it is the least used in our generation and that needs to be changed. I want to encourage you that when you pray for healing, speak words of authority—they will be backed by the power of the Holy Spirit. In our campaigns, I say this when I pray, “In the name of Jesus, blind eyes open, ears that could not hear start to hear now. If you can’t walk, in the name of Jesus, stand up and walk. If you can’t move your arm, move your arm in the name of Jesus.” God gave you authority. Use this prayer principle. Use this prayer of command and you’re going to see an increase in miracles. When you pray, either in the large campaign or when you pray for an individual, use this principle. When you engage in personal evangelism, witnessing one-on-one with somebody in the streets, or in your home, use the prayer of command.

## THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST

**5. The Laying on of Hands:** “They will place their hands on sick people, and they will get well” (Mark 16:18). The Bible tells us in different passages that power came out of Jesus—a healing virtue to heal sick people. This virtue is the anointing of the Holy Spirit, now that you have Jesus, the Holy Spirit is living in you and the same power is flowing from your life to touch other people. When you lay your hand on others, you can rest assured that the same power which flowed through Jesus will flow through you. This power will destroy infirmity, demonic oppression, and any other affliction that troubles people. Be encouraged, when you pray and lay hands-on people, believing in your heart that the power of the Holy Spirit will flow through you—you will be agents of healing.

Let me insert some practical advice, you must be sensitive to the culture and the surrounding environment. If it makes you, or the other person uncomfortable, you do not have to lay your hands directly on the part of the body that is sick. Sometimes it’s just enough to lay hands on the head or on the shoulder of the person. The Holy Spirit will give you discernment—He will give you wisdom, don’t neglect the practice of this principle. Every time it’s possible, lay hands on the sick and release healing in Jesus’ name.

**6. Casting Out the Spirit of Infirmity:** Again, let’s look at the Great Commission, “And these signs will accompany those who believe: In My name they will drive out demons” (Mark 16:17). In our campaigns, I always pray a mass prayer of deliverance in our services. It’s very common that dozens, sometimes hundreds of people, who are oppressed by the devil are set free. There are still many people in our world today who are in desperate need of deliverance. When we minister deliverance, we are continuing the ministry of Jesus. Jesus cast out many demons. He set oppressed people free when He shared the gospel. The signs of deliverance follow Jesus, and they will follow you too. In the Scriptures, many people also received physical healing when they were delivered of demonic oppression.

In Mark 9, we read of a boy who was demonized... The demon would throw the boy to the floor where he foamed at the mouth and gnashed his teeth. This is a very dire picture of someone suffering from demonic oppression. We have encountered situations like that many times on the mission fields—you will

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

encounter them too. Jesus rebuked that demon, and the demon gave a loud shriek and shook the boy violently, but it came out of him—the boy was set free, and Jesus restored him. Jesus is still setting people free today through you and through His church. He wants to use you to bring deliverance. Be bold, pray for people to take authority against the powers of darkness. Demons are demonic spirits that hate humankind, and they will do anything they can to destroy us. But the good news is that Jesus defeated the devil on the cross and gave us victory over dark principalities—we battle from a position of victory.

Many times, I am asked, “Brother Rubens, you go to remote parts of the world. Aren’t you concerned sometimes about the oppression of the demonic in that area?” My answer is, always “Absolutely not.” If Jesus entered a room with a million of the most vicious demons, He would not be afraid for one second. In fact, the demons would be afraid, and they would flee. Jesus now lives in me; He lives in you. So, wherever we go, Jesus travels with us supplying his power, His glory, and his anointing. His authority travels with us and we do not have to be afraid of the devil. The devil is afraid of a Christian who understands who he or she is in Christ Jesus. The devil is afraid of you. So, in the name of Jesus, be bold! Take your authority against the powers of the darkness and set people free in Jesus’ name.

**7. Put Faith into Action:** Many of the people healed in the New Testament, and today, are healed the exact moment they put their faith into action. Let’s look again at a passage that illustrates this point clearly. “In Lystra there sat a man who was lame. He had been that way from birth and had never walked. He listened to Paul as he was speaking. Paul looked directly at him, saw that he had faith to be healed and called out, ‘stand up on your feet!’ At that the man jumped up and began to walk” (Acts 14:8-10). Paul simply preached the gospel and saw that the man had faith to be healed. When he saw that, he spoke the prayer of command and told the man to stand up. That man did not wait for an angelic vision, he did not wait for a tingly feeling to go through his body—no, he acted by faith. He jumped up, and in that moment was healed. To put faith in action means, by faith, you do what you could not do before. In our campaigns, I always tell the people, “Now that we have prayed, do what you could not do before. If you couldn’t raise your hand, raise it now. If you could not see, open your eyes

## THE MIRACULOUS SIGNS OF THE EVANGELIST

and see. Test your body, move your body, check where the pain was and see that it's gone. Check that the growth disappeared... Put your faith in action now." It's amazing that most people who leave their wheelchairs or crutches are healed at that moment. They do by faith what they could not do before.

**8. Ministry Through the Spiritual Gifts:** Listen carefully, "Now to each one the manifestation of the Spirit is given for the common good. To one there is given through this Spirit a message of wisdom, to another a message of knowledge by means of the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit, to another gifts of healing by that one Spirit, to another miraculous powers, to another prophecy, to another distinguishing between spirits, to another speaking in different kinds of tongues, and to still another, the interpretation of tongues. All these are the work of one and the same Spirit, and He distributes them to each one, just as He determines" (1 Corinthians 12:7-11).

The spiritual gifts are special manifestations of divine power that will boost your ministry, but there are important principles you need to understand. First, you do not own this spiritual gift. The gift is given by the Spirit of God and flows through you to bless people. Also, with the exception of the gift of tongues, you do not control the gift. The Holy Spirit controls the gift, and the gift will manifest according to His plan and purposes. You must understand that you don't control the anointing—the anointing controls you.

## THE POWER GIFTS

Let's look at three specific gifts on this list—the power gifts. These are the gifts most commonly in operation in the life of an evangelist. One is the gift of faith. The "gift of faith" is a supernatural surge of boldness and courage to do the impossible. If you experience this gift, you will know what I'm talking about.

I was once in Brazil speaking to a church plant. There were approximately fifty people in attendance. This place was dangerous, it was controlled by a drug cartel and the drug lord was present. People told me how courageous I was to come because people had been murdered at the very spot we held our event. The cartel boss checked us out to see what we would do, surrounded by some really mean

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

looking people, he kept a distance. But in that little service, God did a wonderful miracle, a blind man received his sight. That man that was known in that neighborhood, he was so happy; he started to shout and jump and dance. There was great joy in that moment, and I sensed the Holy Spirit. He moved within me, and I was taken by a supernatural boldness. I turned to the cartel boss, pointed my finger at him, and said, “You have been running away from the Lord for too long! It’s time to come to Jesus. Do you want to do it immediately?” That man started to shake, a tear rolled down his eye and he came forward and went down on his knees. He gave his life to the Lord and was beautifully saved. Now, later I thought, “Oh my God! What did I do? I called out the cartel boss—a mass murderer!” But it was the gift of faith that began to operate in that moment.

“Gifts of healing” will increase the number of miracles that happen when you pray. Note that the word here is in plural form—it says gifts. Spirit-filled scholars tend to agree that it is probably referring to different expressions of this gift. Some people may have more success praying for the deaf. Some will have more success praying for the blind, and so on.

The Bible also talks about miraculous powers. That’s the gift in operation for extraordinary miracles—those beyond regular healings. I’m talking about the raising of the dead; God creating body parts that weren’t there; or, the multiplication of food, for example.

This is an important Scripture to know, “Follow the way of love and eagerly desire gifts of the Spirit...” (1 Corinthians 14:1). Let this desire grow in your heart in order to experience the miracle working power of God in every way. Ask God for His spiritual gifts and He will manifest his gifts in your life.

I pray you learned practical principles to use in your life and ministry in order to see an increase of the miraculous signs and wonders following the preaching of the gospel. These are available to you as fulfill the evangelistic ministry entrusted to you. I encourage you in the name of Jesus—Go forth! Preach the gospel with signs and wonders, and glorify the name of Jesus. The world needs you. God bless you.

# **THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM**

Siegfried Tomazsewski

## **SYNOPSIS**

Evangelism and deliverance go hand-in-hand. In this message, Evangelist Siegfried Tomazsewski teaches us the full meaning of deliverance throughout both the Old and New Testaments and why it is a crucial piece of the good news of the gospel.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Siegfried worked alongside Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke as European Director of Christ for all Nations (CfaN), for some 18 years. He has preached at large evangelistic campaigns, taught at CfaN Fire Conferences, ministered in churches around the world and has established and founded ministries under Evangelist Bonnke's leadership. Pastor Tomazsewski was born in Germany and worked in various management positions in the commercial world before his "fulltime ministry." He ministered as a youth pastor and elder in a church in the south of



## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

Germany for many years where he experienced great growth in the fellowship. Additionally, he also worked as a missionary in the United Arab Emirates. After his Bible school in Erzhausen (Beroa), in 1994 he became ordained with the German Pentecostal Fellowship. He also served as chairman of the PEC 2003 (Berlin/Germany). Siegfried has led many to Christ through mass evangelism and one-on-one witnessing. His passion is to call people to the cross of Christ and impart to others the fire of God that is within him. In 2012, he founded the organization, “Calling Ministry.” He is a sought-after evangelist and conference speaker who has ministered in 44 countries around the world.

For more info, visit: <https://callingministry.org>

## THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM

**G**od's deliverance and evangelism go hand-in-hand. The word deliverance in the Bible paints a picture of the full scope of salvation and culminates in the finished work of the cross. There are over thirty-five words in the Old Testament that are translated as deliverance or to deliver. And there are at least twelve in the New Testament. Now, I want to focus on three points, the gift, the deliverance, and evangelism.

I believe you know what a gift is but let me give you some simple points. A gift cannot be earned. It is free of charge. It is the same for the gift of evangelism and deliverance. Secondly, a gift is not a remuneration for what we do or who we are—God has given us this gift for free. You cannot earn it, you cannot work harder to gain it, you should pray, but you don't earn the gift because of your prayer life, your studying, or your behavior. Additionally, a gift is given once—period, it doesn't need to be given repeatedly.

The Bible says that the Holy Spirit will come to us and remain with us. We don't need to ask again and again for the gift of the Holy Spirit. And then, as a general understanding, a gift is a tool—it typically has a function and is not something we put on a shelf just to show off. A gift on my shelf will not help anyone. Say I have the most wonderful medicine that cures migraines. If I put it in my closet and tell everyone what wonderful medicine I have at home, it does nothing to alleviate the suffering of those who are plagued by migraines. It will help no one until I give that medicine to the people who suffer from these debilitating headaches. A tool is only as good as I make use of it—consequently, I also need to understand how to use that tool. If I have a tire that's blown, I don't need a screwdriver, a stethoscope or, a spoon—I need the right tool. God has given us gifts as tools. He wants us to work in the way He designed us to operate.

When we speak about the gift of deliverance and evangelism, for most people what immediately comes to mind is demonic possession and prayer. Maybe you've participated in a deliverance service and that's a good thing. But it would be a pity if that's the scope of our understanding of deliverance. We minimize the fullness of what the Bible actually defines as deliverance if we limit it to what took place at a deliverance service. We need to return to the full meaning of the

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

word. Exodus 14:13 says this, “Moses answered the people, ‘Do not be afraid. Stand firm and you will see the deliverance the LORD will bring you today. The Egyptians you see today you will never see again.’”

The Israelites were in captivity. They were slaves but had dramatically left Egypt. Then suddenly, they were standing in front of a big, wet problem. But they were instructed that, “The LORD will fight for you; you need only to be still.” (Exodus 14:14). Basically, God is telling them, “I will deliver you. I will not only deliver you out of Egypt, but I will deliver you from the Egyptians. I will rescue you. I will bring you into a safe place.”

When we look at the Old Testament, we see two main words that are used for deliverance in connection with this story. The first word is *peletah*. It means escape, or an escaped remnant. In Genesis 45:7 we read this concerning Joseph. But God sent me ahead of you to preserve for you a remnant on earth and to save your lives by a great deliverance.” This kind of deliverance is what the word *peletah* means. To bring someone into safety. But another word used in the Old Testament in the connection with deliverance is *teshuah*. What does it sound like?—Yeshua or Jesus. Both words mean the same—to be saved, or something that is safe from a situation or an incident, to bring to welfare.

One of the New Testament words for deliverance is *aphesis*. This is a Greek word meaning to be released from bondage, to be released from imprisonment, to have forgiveness or be pardoned from sin, to have remission of penalty, or to be brought into liberty from some kind of slavery. And one more New Testament word for deliverance, *apolutrosis* which means to be released, affected by a payment of ransom, to deliver it, to be liberated.

So, both in the Old Testament and the New, deliverance speaks about a situation, a person, or a group of people who have been brought out from some kind of bondage, slavery, or darkness; and brought into a place of light and safety.

There are people who are in crisis or in jeopardy. These are groups of people in various countries who are imprisoned, enslaved, or under persecution—they need deliverance. Maybe these are people who suffer severe poverty, hunger, or

## THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM

financial crisis—they need deliverance. Or people who face physical sickness, health issues, or death—they need deliverance. Certainly, those under attack from the devil fall into this category. We receive many prayer requests from people who are burdened and troubled by demons—they need deliverance from the attacks of the devil. Some people need deliverance from their own personal lusts, obsessions, perversion, or situations they are in. The basic point of all this is that we all need deliverance from sin and its effects—that's why God sent His only Son. He died on the cross so that we might be delivered from sin.

That means the broken relationship between mankind and God was mended by the blood of Jesus Christ. We were delivered and brought back into a relationship with God. I'm reminded of a story that Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke used many times when we traveled around the globe. When he was in the Bible College in Swansea, the school had financial problems. Year after year, when the winter came, they would run out of coal to heat the building, and had no money to purchase any more. So, the Dean of the school would call the students together and instruct them to pray for coal, otherwise, they would sit in the cold.

So, they started praying. Not long after, Reinhard Bonnke said he heard a shout throughout the hallway of the school, "We have been delivered!" Someone had provided the funds for the coal. He learned a great lesson through that experience. One day, he was on the beach sharing the gospel and he realized he didn't have any money to get back to the school. He and his friend started praying and suddenly they saw somebody coming. They were handed the exact amount of money they needed to get back to the school. Do you know what they said, "We have been delivered!" Of course, as we share the gospel of Jesus Christ, we are to share a message of deliverance. But at the same time, we can rely on the deliverance, the grace, the mercy, and the love of Jesus Christ for our day-to-day needs.

Deliverance means more than just casting out demons, let's look at what deliverance means in different cultures and religions. We need to understand deliverance because many places in the world rule through oppression, control, persecution, witchcraft, or political, economic, and psychological power. There

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

are countries in this world today still using female genital mutilation (FGM)—what a horrific thing to inflict upon young girls. But in these places the witchcraft and the secret societies are powerful! What should we do when we encounter this kind of abuse? Take to the streets holding a banner? We have something stronger than a banner! I believe that the power of the Holy Spirit can deliver people from that kind of evil bondage.

Occultism is strong in many parts of the world. When we say people need to be delivered from occultism, we immediately think of Africa, or Asian countries. It hardly comes into our minds that in the Western world, occultism is as powerful as in any other country. I was in North Africa, sharing the gospel, and somebody came running to the front manifesting. Somebody else wanted to jump on him, but I said, “Leave him...” Instead, I just stopped my message for a moment. I said, “In the name of Jesus, let him go.” He became completely calm. He just laid on the floor. I didn’t know whether he was sleeping or listening because his face was turned, but he was calm.

When the meeting was over, they took him out of the room. I sat down for lunch and a couple of moments later I saw the same person serving food. I asked the pastor, “Is this not the same man?” He said, “Yes, he is our cook in this church. We tried everything, but nothing worked. Now he has been delivered.” This man was not delivered through my words or some magic thing. His deliverance came through the power of the Word of God—nothing else but the power of the blood of Jesus.

You might say, “Well, that’s Africa.” However, I was preaching in the state of Florida at a church. While I was sharing the gospel, the Holy Spirit spoke to me and said, “There’s a person here suffering from a demonic spirit.” Suddenly, a woman jumped up and ran to the front. She stared at me, and I looked directly into her eyes. As I left the stage, I said, “What do you want?” She couldn’t look into my eyes anymore. She looked down. She said, “I need Jesus.” I knew there was a battle going on in that woman—a fierce battle between darkness and light. She wanted to be delivered, but the demon didn’t want to let her go. I said, “Look into my eyes.” She couldn’t look. I lifted her chin and looked her in her

## THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM

eyes. I said, “In the name of Jesus, let her go.” She fell to the ground. After a few moments, she stood up and had been completely delivered. The pastor and his wife both spoke to me after the meeting. They said she had come to their services two or three times. This was a woman in the Western world who was suffering from demons. Occultism and witchcraft are growing in the Western world; you would be amazed at what I have encountered.

But let’s look at deliverance from another perspective—our own personal testimonies of how God delivered us. When I was 15-years-old, I ran away from home. I was raised in a Christian home, I was going to church, but I was also going to the disco. I lived in both sides—darkness and light. I felt as though I could not live like that anymore. It was like I was torn into pieces. One night an evangelist came to our church. He said something like, “Make a decision tonight, either be all for Jesus or leave it all.” Wow! I was the first one at the front. He smiled at me, and I said, “I made a decision.” I shook his hand and said, “I want to leave it all.” I saw his expression fall. I turned around and saw my mother and father. My father was an elder in that church and I realized they were both crying, I left the church and my home.

For six years, my life was a downward spiral into drugs, perversion, and alcohol—I was bound and even tried to take my life. I left to go to Germany where I thought I could start over. I thought, nobody knows my life. Within days, the same devil that had tormented me where I had left from was the same devil back to his old tricks in Germany. I didn’t know how to get free, but my mother, who is a true born-again Christian, said, “You cannot minister to demonized people. You need a spiritual specialist to pray for them.” I asked her why she thought that. She said, “Well, the evil spirits may jump on you.” For some time, I believed that, but then I realized that the Bible says, “You, dear children, are from God and have overcome them, because the one who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world” (1 John 4:4). The next moment I realized if Jesus Christ is in my life, how dare the devil touch me there is no landing place in my life for the devil. We don’t have to be afraid if we are filled with the power of the Holy Spirit.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I don't want to only cover deliverance, but evangelism as well. Deliverance and evangelism go hand-in-hand, they cannot be separated. According to the New Testament, *evangelion* means to share the good news with the poor, heal the brokenhearted, preach deliverance to the captives, cause blind eyes to see, and set at liberty those who are bruised. This is what we read in Luke 4:18, the anointing of God is upon me to preach the gospel, to bring the good news about God's deliverance.

That same Scripture is found in the Old Testament in Isaiah 61:1 (ESV), "The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me, because the LORD has anointed me to bring good news to the poor; he has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound." We are to share the good news about God's deliverance—that is the gospel of Jesus Christ. There are two ways of sharing the good news in these verses. Luke 4:18 says "preach the gospel." But the second thing we need to see is that we are to "proclaim liberty" or deliverance.

First, we share the good news with a person so they can come to know Jesus. But we also proclaim liberty to those who are held captive in any way. This is how Moses led the people. He said, "God wants to lead you out of slavery and into the Promised Land." He preached good news. Then he went to Pharaoh and said, "Let my people go." This was proclaiming liberty by declaring the will of God, "Let my people go!" You and I are also called to preach the same way. This is what Jesus did. He shared the good news with the woman at the well. He shared the good news with Zacchaeus. But when Jesus met that one person who was filled with a legion of demons, He did not share the good news to the demons. He declared, "Leave him now." Because of His authority, the demons had to leave. We too, are called to proclaim the will of God. We preach both the Gospel and deliverance.

Let's look again at the story in Mark 5:1-7 "They went across the lake to the region of the Gerasenes. When Jesus got out of the boat, a man with an impure spirit came from the tombs to meet him. This man lived in the tombs, and no one could bind him anymore, not even with a chain. For he had often been chained

## THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM

hand and foot, but he tore the chains apart and broke the irons on his feet. No one was strong enough to subdue him. Night and day among the tombs and in the hills he would cry out and cut himself with stones. When he saw Jesus from a distance, he ran and fell on his knees in front of him. He shouted at the top of his voice, ‘What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? In God’s name don’t torture me!’”

What a funny request, the demons asked Jesus not to torture them. They knew exactly who had the authority. “Then Jesus asked him, ‘What is your name?’ ‘My name is Legion,’ he replied, ‘for we are many.’ And he begged Jesus again and again not to send them out of the area. A large herd of pigs was feeding on the nearby hillside. The demons begged Jesus, ‘Send us among the pigs; allow us to go into them.’ He gave them permission, and the impure spirits came out and went into the pigs. The herd, about two thousand in number, rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned” (Mark 5:9-13).

When you are filled with the power of the Holy Spirit, you can command liberty for others in the name of Jesus. It’s the power of Jesus speaking through you. Jesus Himself commanded. The Gerasene people did not understand the good news He was preaching to them. Even when He cast out the demon. They were disappointed because something unusual happened that they did not like. “Jesus then left that area.”

When you preach the gospel and you ask people to come to Jesus, they will receive the gift of deliverance—the gift of salvation. They are set free from sin, they are no longer in slavery. They have been “For he has rescued us from the dominion of darkness and brought us into the kingdom of the Son he loves” (Colossians 1:13). Satan has no power over them anymore. This is so important to preach today so that we might understand. Once we are delivered and Jesus takes over our lives, the devil has no place in our homes anymore. We need to make sure that Jesus takes over the whole house—every area of our lives. If we keep areas of our lives and say, “Jesus, you can have all those areas, but there is one area that is my personal kingdom. I will make my own decisions here.” You



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

will have problems in that area. Why? Because Jesus will not share His kingdom with the devil, either give it all to Him or leave it.

When we ask Jesus to forgive us, He makes us a new creation. Before we come to Jesus, we are like a vase that's broken and cracked. But Jesus says, "I will make all things new." He gives you a brand-new life. We become like a new vase. However, it's important that at that very moment we are filled with the power of the Holy Spirit. Otherwise, the devil will come right back and fill your life with filth, junk, and sin. We need to live in the power of the Holy Spirit. He empowers us to be witnesses and helps us walk in holiness. Are you called to be an evangelist? You need the Holy Spirit to empower you to preach the gospel and proclaim deliverance to the captive.

I also have one quick word about casting out demons—this requires wisdom and discernment. When you minister under the power of the Holy Spirit, you will possibly experience an occasion where somebody will manifest or fall during your meeting. In one of my meetings, somebody almost took another person out. Some of the prayer warriors were shouting and praying until this person almost died. There was no need for casting out demons as this person simply had an epileptic fit. The Lord had strategically placed competent physicians who were able to diagnose the medical problem and intervene therapeutically to help person.

But then too, we also have experienced occasions where somebody fell under the power of the Holy Spirit. Doctors and nurses had no clue what was going on. They tried to treat this person with medicine, but they were just slain in the Spirit. I believe we need people who are gifted with wisdom and discernment when casting out demons. Paul told Timothy, "For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind" (2 Timothy 1:7 NKJV). The power he speaks of is *dunamis* power. We need that power to cast out demons. But what does Paul mean by a sound mind?

Listen, if we only have power, as wonderful as that is, we may bring damage to someone. We need to combine that power with love. If we only have love, but

## THE GIFT OF DELIVERANCE & EVANGELISM

no power, we may end up in social work, or some kind of humanitarian work. That's wonderful and very important, but Kingdom work requires the power of the Holy Spirit. So how does a sound mind fit in? Here is a motto I use for my own life. "We do not need hot heads." Hotheads are people who quickly make decisions out of their emotions and have a cold heart. We need people with passion, with a burning heart, but with a cool head. That's what Paul is writing here. When we evangelize, proclaim, help, get people free, or cast demons out, we need power, love, and a sound mind.

I want to conclude with this important truth—we need to make disciples. Evangelists love to speak about the gifts of the Holy Spirit. We love to speak about the proclamation of the Word of God. We love to speak about sharing the gospel. But it is also imperative that we make disciples. We must combine the gift of deliverance with evangelism. We need to lead people into a relationship with a living God so that they grow and do not remain children.

We probably know Zechariah 4:6 by heart. "So he said to me, 'This is the word of the Lord to Zerubbabel: Not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit,' says the Lord Almighty." I had a dream some time ago. I saw myself in the throne room of God. There were many people lining up like they were waiting for something. And then I saw the actual throne of God. It was bright, but I couldn't see anyone sitting on it. One person approached the throne. Each person that approached, received something. In between the crowd was an aisle. At the end of the aisle, there was a door where one by one people were leaving the throne room.

There was one person who kept looking at his watch impatiently. It was like he was saying, "Do I really need to stand in line? Do I really need to go there? Do I need to really get what they have to offer, or can I do it on my own? I am busy. There is so much to do." In my dream, I knew what was going on in that person. I cried out, "Don't! Don't change your mind. Go! You need it. You need it!"

As the last the person turned around and walked towards the door. I shouted, "Do not go without the anointing!" But I saw the person leave the room. As he left, he was speaking words, but they sounded like hollow bullets. His words

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

tumbled to the ground and had no effect. I saw how that person laid hands on other people, but nothing happened. We cannot do ministry without the power of the Holy Spirit. You need the anointing of the Holy Spirit to bring deliverance, to preach, and to proclaim the gospel. As evangelists, it is critical that we "...taste the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come" (Hebrews 6:5). When we taste of something, we get full, then, metabolize it and we are filled as it becomes part of us. Dear evangelist, be filled with the power of the Holy Spirit and taste the powers of the world to come that you might bring them to those enslaved by their sin.

# **HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL**

Mattheus van der Steen

## **SYNOPSIS**

Mattheus van der Steen reminds us that there are no closed nations in God's eyes. He has a strategy for reaching the whole world. Evangelists are territory-takers and because of that, there will be warfare to fight. However, the battle can be won when we understand what God has called us to and who we are in Christ.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Mattheus van der Steen has his home in Rotterdam, the Netherlands. After college, and during his tenure as a Maritime Officer, he traveled to several countries. After the war in Kosovo, the Lord called him to help the widows and orphans. In 2011, he founded the "House of Heroes" church and currently serves as its senior pastor. God uses Mattheus' organization, the "Gospel Music Festival" to disciple nations throughout the globe, including countries hostile to heaven and the gospel such as, Myanmar, Laos, North Korea, and some 82 other

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

countries which have been touched by this ministry. In 2016, he founded the “School of Supernatural Heroes” where hundreds of people are trained to live a supernatural lifestyle. Additionally, van der Steen is the author of several books among which is bestseller “Dare to Dream.” Mattheus’ dream is to galvanize emerging generations with the power of the Holy Spirit and teach others how to live like Jesus.

For more info, visit: <https://www.vandersteenministries.org>

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

**W**hen we speak of closed nations, we are referring to nations, regions, areas, cities, or villages where there is no freedom of religion. These are places with no freedom to share the gospel of Jesus Christ. There are still many regions in the world where you *actually go to prison or receive the death penalty for sharing the gospel*. Yet, with God, there are no nations that He sees as closed to His message.

This is an important principle for every evangelist to know. Over the last twenty-five years, through the power of the Holy Spirit, I have learned different ways to reach closed nations. I began this journey through reading the book “God’s Smuggler” by Brother Andrew. He was faithful to bring the gospel into Russia, and then China, in the 1950s and 1960s. Years later, I had the privilege to not only meet him, but to be mentored by him, and, as it turned out, my sister married his son.

It was an incredible privilege to learn so much from his life. Matthew 24:13-14 says, “but the one who stands firm to the end will be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all nations, and then the end will come.” So much is taking place on a global scale in our day that it lends itself to all kinds of conspiracy theories. However, as an evangelist, I always look back to these Scripture verses because I know that Jesus will return when the gospel has been preached to *all the nations*.

Acts 2:17a tells us that, “In the last days, God says, I will pour out my Spirit on all people...” With God, no nation is closed, there are just physical borders that restrict entry or exit, similar to the locked jail cell in Acts 16:25-30. But Luke goes on to say in the second part of that same verse, “...Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your young men will see visions, your old men will dream dreams.” This is what right is happening now in the Middle East. Thousands of people are receiving dreams and visions because the Holy Spirit is being poured out over whole regions. They are encountering Jesus regardless of borders designed by man to keep Him out of their nation and responding to the cry of God’s heart described in Acts 2:21 where we read, “And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.” Just as the Jailer in Acts 16:30, multitudes in the Middle

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

East who hunger and thirst for righteousness are asking the right question, “Sirs, what must I do to be saved?”

The Lord said in Psalm 2:7-8 “I will proclaim the Lord’s decree: He said to me, ‘You are my son; I have become your Father. Ask Me, and I will make the nations your inheritance, the ends of the earth your possession.’” In other words, God is saying that He knows how to reach those who live in what we call closed nations. All tribes and people groups will bow down before Him. Those who live in difficult areas to preach the gospel will hear the message. The Lord’s desire is that every person on earth experience Jesus and encounter the Holy Spirit, just as Revelation 7:9 describes, “After this I looked, and there before me was a great multitude that no one could count, from every nation, tribe, people, and language, standing before the throne and before the Lamb. They were wearing white robes and were holding palm branches in their hands. “No nation is closed to our God, hostile to the gospel or not!

I have been to both North Korea and Myanmar (or Burma). In North Korea, we do not do large gospel crusades because it is a closed nation. When the Lord sent me to Myanmar, eleven years ago, it was also closed. But now we hold large crusades there as the Lord has pried open the borders and Myanmar is ripe for the gospel to be proclaimed. Furthermore, I believe that I will see North Korea opened as well—we truly live in incredible times. And because of that, I want to share with you two keys that have helped us as evangelists see change and transformation.

In 2 Kings, Chapter 6, we read that the King of Syria was threatening to destroy the whole nation of Israel. But there was a man named Elisha who was filled with the power of the Holy Spirit and the Lord revealed the inside track of the king’s strategy to him. So, the king wanted to get rid of Elisha because every time he plotted against Israel, Elisha, being full of the Holy Spirit, knew the plans of the enemy.

While Elisha was praying, he literally heard the king speaking in his bedroom about wanting to destroy Israel. So, the king sent his best trained officers—the

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

equivalent of today's Special Forces or Navy Seals, to find Elisha and kill him. And then his intelligence network paid off as a report came back that he was in Dothan. They deployed the best of the best to capture Elisha with state-of-the-art-weaponry—horses, chariots, and a menacing military contingent. Their combat divisions completely surrounded the city of Dothan where they were held up. Elisha's servant saw with the natural eye that they were hemmed in and cried out to his master, "What shall we do?" But Elisha replied, "Don't be afraid," the prophet answered. "Those who are with us are more than those who are with them" (2 Kings 6:16).

If you have a passion; a calling from the Lord to reach closed nations, there is a heavenly realm that goes with you. When I go into North Korea, Laos, Myanmar, difficult areas in India, or Pakistan, I know that I have a heavenly army of angels who are carriers of fire standing with me—they are real. What was it that Elisha wanted his servant to see? "Then Elisha prayed and said, 'O Lord, please open his eyes that he may see.' So, the Lord opened the eyes of the young man, and he saw, and behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha." I prophecy over you, dear evangelist, if you have a calling for closed nations, you have a whole army of chariots, angels, and heavenly beings with you. I could share numerous stories about supernatural angelic activities where doors were opened that were impossible to walk through.

Elisha told them, "This is not the road and this is not the city. Follow me, and I will lead you to the man you are looking for." And he led them to Samaria. After they entered the city, Elisha said, "LORD, open the eyes of these men so they can see." Then the LORD opened their eyes and they looked, and there they were, inside Samaria. When the king of Israel saw them, he asked Elisha, "Shall I kill them, my father? Shall I kill them?" "Do not kill them," he answered. "Would you kill those you have captured with your own sword or bow? Set food and water before them so that they may eat and drink and then go back to their master." <sup>23</sup> So he prepared a great feast for them, and after they had finished eating and drinking, he sent them away, and they returned to their master. So the bands from Aram stopped raiding Israel's territory (2 Kings 6: 19-23).



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

When I go to nations like North Korea, Myanmar, or Laos, people say to me but are you not afraid? How can you work with leaders who are not Christian? Let me put it this way, Daniel served under a ruthless leader in Babylon and Joseph also served the Pharaoh of his day. What did Daniel and Joseph display in their lives that won them favor? Compassion! This is a key principle that you need to know and embrace in order to minister in closed nations. Instead of slaughtering the invading army, Elisha showed them compassion. The only way to reach closed nations with their domineering regimes, hostile religions, or militant allegiance to communism, with its uncompromising view of “religion as the opiate of the people” is by moving in the opposite spirit through true compassion.

We are highly compassionate when we go into North Korea. Do we agree with the stuff they do? We know what the news broadcasts about their nation, but we don't speak about it. We pray, “Lord, give us a heart for the government of North Korea.” Ten years ago, when I first got permission to go to North Korea, the Lord told me, “Look for a smile behind the people.” I took ten men and women with me. We prayed for seven days. When you're there, you are followed day and night and have guides with you 24/7. These guides have very prominent positions with the government, and are amazing people. They know your language.

We obeyed their laws, and we knew they were listening in on our conversations. But after showing them compassion those seven days we prayed, showing them love, and not acting frustrated or angry, they asked, “What is with you?” I said, “Well, we are Christians.”

One day we went to a place where there was a collection of large statues gathered. This is the place where the people worship their leaders, just like in the time of Daniel and Nebuchadnezzar. But I said, “Listen, I cannot bow before any god except my God.” They accepted it. Then another day, being led by the Holy Spirit, we prayed for a man. He was fully healed. We do not know if he received Christ, but he was certainly touched by heaven. This took place on our first trip.

The next trip, we spent the evenings singing. One of the governmental leaders enjoyed it and allowed us to sing in public. We sang songs such as “Silent Night”

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

and “Amazing Grace.” Even though they didn’t understand English, they felt the presence of the Lord. We were asked if we would bring more like us into their nation and we told them, “Yes, of course.” This allowed us to travel throughout the nation more freely.

We then brought more than 130 Christians who were filled with the Holy Spirit into North Korea. There were no planes willing to take us, so North Korea sent two small planes from Pyongyang to Beijing, China. Government officials in China from North Korea gave us our visas when we entered Pyongyang. For seven days we had a special escort while we worshipped the Lord.

The government allowed us to plant trees on a big mountain. We plant trees of hope now every year. We also go into the hospitals to spread love and compassion. One morning, as I was praying, I said, “Lord, I want to see North and South Korea reunited. I want to see the millions of people in North Korea saved. And the Lord responded, “Matt, today you are going to the most dangerous borders in the world—the Demilitarized zone (DMZ zone). Thousands of mines are there. Thirty people came with me holding white flags as a sign of surrender. We were able to go through the army. This was the most dangerous situation we’ve ever been in.

But we made it to the border of North Korea and began singing “Amazing Grace. The presence of the Holy Spirit invaded that place. Then we noticed a dove on one of the North Korean buildings. I explained to one of the high officers from the North Korean regime that the dove represented the Holy Spirit. I encouraged him to listen to its coo and said, “It’s the Holy Spirit who can bring peace to this nation.”

I requested one of the officers, “Please take me to the biggest stadium in all North Korea.” They brought me to what is the biggest stadium in the whole world—it seats 150,000 people. I believe one day, many evangelists, myself included, will preach the gospel in that stadium. We will honor the government and see thousands of people saved. It is compassion that allows you to be seated at a banqueting table in the presence of your enemies.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Another essential key is to know that the Lord has assigned you specific territory. The reason many of you faced fierce storms in the last few years is because the Lord was preparing you to take territory. “That day when evening came, he said to his disciples, ‘Let us go over to the other side.’” (Mark 4:35). God is saying that to you as well, “Go to the other side.” The disciples didn’t want to go to the other side because Jews did not live over there. It was a heathen nation where the Gadarenes lived. But the Lord never wants us to stay in our own circle. He wants us to step into the devil’s backyard and take new ground. We just have to know that the moment we step into new territory, be aware of spiritual warfare.

What happened when Jesus said to His disciples, “Let’s go to the other side. Let’s go take territory. Let’s go to the Gadarenes, an unreached tribe.” We read about it in Mark 4:36-37... So, there were the evangelists sitting with Jesus in the boat while He was sound asleep—we all know this story. The reason this demonic storm came towards them is because the devil knew the moment Jesus and His evangelists stepped into this territory; he was going to lose it. The reason you face so many storms is because the Lord wants to give you new territory. He wants to challenge you to step out of the boat and reach other people who are different than you. This is how you reach closed nations and explore new territory. But many evangelists stop because the waves are so high, the resistance is so intense, and the chaos is overwhelming that they start to panic—they don’t know what to do. They find themselves in financial crises. They don’t understand why they are going through difficulties, but it’s all connected with taking new territory.

The moment you step into new territory, you must be on guard for spiritual warfare. I don’t mean just throwing salt or blowing the shofar, that’s all good and fine... But Jesus encountered spiritual warfare when it came to taking new territory because He knew it was rightly His and had been assigned to Him. As an evangelist, like Jesus and His disciples, you are on the frontlines taking territory. You can’t go into battle guessing, you have to know what yours is by right. Jesus knew that territory belonged to Him, not to the devil, that’s the reason Jesus slept like a baby on the cushion in the midst of the storm.

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

We then read that Jesus and the disciples made it across the lake. They came to the region of Gerasene. “When Jesus stepped out of the boat, immediately there met him, out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit” (Mark 5:2, ESV). This man had a demon, I love how Jesus asked him, “What is your name?” (Mark 5:9). Sometimes, as evangelists, we can be intimidated by witch doctors, Satanists, and all manner of darkness. But for Jesus, it’s peanuts because He knew what His was by right.

“‘My name is Legion’ he replied, ‘for we are many’” (Mark 5:9). This is very important. The man begged Jesus not to send them out of the territory. As evangelists, you will face strongholds in cities and villages where the enemy doesn’t want you to come. That’s the reason you will face struggle, resistance, and even closed doors. But don’t give up because the storm is connected to the territory and the Lord will give you what is rightly yours to take.

We must remember we’re not fighting against people, but against powers and principalities. So, Jesus, cast the demons out of the man and into a herd of pigs. Then Jesus said this, “...Go home to your own people and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and how he has had mercy on you” (Mark 5:19).

Through one word spoken by Jesus, the man was fully delivered from all the demons. The strongholds in that region were now gone. Jesus doesn’t deal with symptoms. He deals with the root. Jesus took out the demonic root of that region. He sent the demons into the pigs, who ran off the cliff. Now suddenly, the climate over the city changed. We read later that the whole area was coming to Christ.

Just five minutes earlier, this man had been spiritually chained and full of demons. Jesus entered the scene and set him free. Now the man wanted to follow Jesus anywhere He went. But Jesus said, “No, you need to stay here and tell people what happened. Jesus did not let him, but said, “Go home to your own people and tell them how much the Lord has done for you, and how he has had mercy on you” (Mark 5:20). I get goosebumps from reading this story!

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I believe this demon possessed man became one of the first evangelists. It doesn't matter how demon possessed you were; how sick; or how much trouble you have experienced—one encounter with Jesus and He is able to set you free. You then become one of His best evangelists because you have a testimony. Isn't it incredible? Because of this man's testimony, the whole area was changed. This was an area that encompassed ten cities.

But what a fight Jesus and His disciples had in order to reach that destination. Anytime you explore new territory, you will find yourself in a spiritual battle. evangelists, you are territory-takers. That's indeed what you do through the power and the blood of Jesus—through this sharing of the gospel. You rescue people from darkness and help transfer them into the light. You extend to them eternal life.

Of course, you cannot give them eternal life. They come to Christ through the gospel message, given through your words, so that they will receive their heavenly reward. But you are a territory-taker! That's the reason you struggle with faults, fear, or resistance when you start to take territory. It is vitally important for you to learn in this season what is yours by right!

Mark 3:14-15 says, "He appointed twelve that they might be with him and that he might send them out to preach and to have authority to drive out demons." This is why this school exists, so that you might be equipped to know your authority in Christ as an evangelist. Jesus has given you authority to drive out demons and take new territory.

Eleven years ago, when I was in Jakarta preaching with Phil Pringle at a big conference, my entire life changed. The leadership of that event was fantastic, and the ministry was powerful. Suddenly I heard the Lord say, "Matt, you're about to meet a pastor, he will be coming from the nation of Myanmar. I had never heard of Myanmar. I had never prayed for that nation. But the Lord told me that for a season He was going to use me in Myanmar.

That night somebody informed me that a pastor from Myanmar wanted to meet me. They said, "He heard you preach and wants to talk to you." I knew that was

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

clearly the Lord, so I met this pastor. The people in Myanmar are much smaller than me. I felt like a long giraffe standing next to him. I almost had to get on my knees to talk with him face-to-face. He told me his name was Pastor Phillip and he pastored a small church that only had eight people who cared for 15 orphans. He said, “I saw you in a dream, you came to Myanmar, and I knew you had an anointing to break through strongholds and take new territory.”

As I prayed, I said, “Lord, I have never prayed for Myanmar. I don’t know the language. What do I have to offer? There is only this pastor taking care of a few people and some orphans.” But the Lord told me that this man was like the widow in The Old Testament. He had only a little bit of oil, but he was willing to sacrifice his life, and by doing so, this oil would be multiplied. So, I asked him to share his dream with me. As I listened, I became more and more excited and three months later I headed to Myanmar with a small team out of sheer obedience. Did I have a plan? No! But I went in obedience. I booked a ticket and through supernatural favor, the Lord gave me a visa. I had never seen anything like it, it was completely closed and didn’t even try to bolster its economy by participating in any trade with other nations—the extent of its import and export could be assessed by closing one’s eyes—there was just nothing there; foreign or domestic! The people of Myanmar who managed to drive, drove cars that were manufactured in the 1960s, most of which had huge holes in them, and at that time *there were no churches allowed*.

There were a few governmental churches backed by a very powerful military regime and other religions which were very powerful. When Pastor Phillip picked me up from the airport, he told me we were headed to the “Blind Institute.” What I didn’t know was that we were going to meet other pastors in the Blind Institute. It was a place that was covered and hidden because they were afraid the police would arrest us. When we arrived, we met four or five other pastors, while that night, ten pastors came. But then, the next day, a whopping 50 Pastors came. By the third day, I was amazed as 600 pastors came. There were more pastors in the building than blind people. We prayed for those who were blind, and the Lord truly showed up.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

More importantly, I heard the sound of revival! Like Elijah on the mountain, I saw the rain in a small cloud covering Myanmar. I asked the Lord for a sign and that night it started to rain *in their dry season*. I said, “Lord I want to take a big step of faith. This is new territory. I know we’re going to face warfare and difficulties...” And we did! We even lost people, but I was willing to sacrifice my life for the gospel. I fell in love with this nation and was filled with compassion for the people. I asked the pastors, “What do you dream for Myanmar?” They believed that the stadium would be full of people hearing the gospel of Jesus Christ. They were also believing for the government to announce freedom of religion.

Upon hearing this, we stepped into a taxi and drove to the largest government building. We were stopped by many police officers, but through supernatural intervention, we went into one of the governmental buildings. I prayed, “Lord if this is your will, right here in the Myanmar convention center, we will hold the first gospel crusade. A little less than one year later, we got the necessary permission from the government and 3,000 people showed up! The Christians were a bit afraid because this had never happened before. I’ve never seen anything like it in my entire life. 50 percent of the people who came, got saved. We witnessed incredible healings, signs and wonders as the faith of the Myanmar church and their leaders was built!

We began to dream for the next year. We decided we wanted the biggest stadium in Yangon. That next year we started in a smaller indoor stadium that seated 12,000 people. But the following year, we ended up in that large stadium. It was packed out that first night. The second night, we made the national news. Nothing like this had ever happened in the history of Myanmar. It was new territory!

There was a loss in that crusade. It was a terrible situation. Two young people on my wife’s side of the family, killed themselves. I flew back to the states to handle all that had happened.

## HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL

I was also going to preach that week at “Catch the Fire” with John Arnott. We were going to take a big offering for Myanmar and to cover the crusade. But I arrived at the airport in Yangon with no money. The pastor let me know we needed to pay the bills for that crusade. I informed him that because of the events that had taken place, I couldn’t make it to “Catch the Fire.” They said, “We need \$50,000 tonight. Otherwise, we cannot pay for the lights and the stadium.” I said, “Guys, we need to look to Jesus. Not one another.” We were facing difficulties—demonic storms. We went to our knees at the airport and started to pray. At that time, Myanmar was one of the poorest nations in the world.

The salary for the pastors was \$50 per month. While we were crying out to God in desperation with tears, Pastor Phillip’s phone rang. The man on the other end said, “Pastor Philip, I am an intercessor. This morning I was praying, and I believe I have \$2,000 to put in your account.” \$2,000 is like two- or three-years’ salary. Pastor Philip couldn’t believe it. In less than two days all the money came in. That night, in faith, we held the big crusade. On the second night it was live on television. A governmental minister and religious leaders came—I was shocked. They told us they wanted the microphone, and on live television, they took the mic, and proclaimed, “Today is the day that the government of Myanmar extends freedom of religion.” Oh, the Holy Spirit swept through the place and Christians started to joyfully dance. Then the Holy Spirit said, “Matt, I want you to get off the platform now.” evangelists please be obedient to the Holy Spirit. Sometimes it looks foolish for you to do what the Holy Spirit asks. There were 600 people on the platform including a huge choir. It was live on television. I thought, “What should I do?”

I heard the Holy Spirit say, “Trust me. Remember you prayed for an outpouring of the Holy Spirit, this is not about you, this is about me.” I said, “Lord, it’s always about You.” So together with Evangelist Phillip Montalvo, we walked off the platform. The Lord said, “Let 12,000 people stand up and wait. I’m going to do something that will change the course of this. I was on my knees asking the Lord to let this be over, I wanted to go home. The governmental ministers, police officers, and religious leaders were all on the stage and the television. But I kept



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

hearing the Holy Spirit say, “Matt, trust Me. Remember, I asked the disciples to wait in the upper room for something I was going to give. It looked foolish too.”

After the longest ten minutes of my life, suddenly we heard the sound of wind. There was no air conditioning, and it was indoors. It came from the roof. The only thing I can describe it as was something like a tornado. I saw it. Then the wind fell suddenly and twelve thousand people, in less than two-to-three seconds, some not even Christians, were on the floor, crying, weeping, and shaking.

I hadn’t even preached yet. I knew this was holy ground and I took off my shoes. The Lord said, “This is new territory.” With my translator, I walked up to teenagers who were shaking in the power of the Holy Spirit. I could see Jesus! I saw this completely white man with coals of fire. I started repenting right then. I took the mic, but I didn’t have to explain the gospel. I just did an invitation to receive Christ as Lord and Savior. 95 percent of the people in that meeting hall received Jesus Christ and the story spread all over Myanmar.

Fast forward ten years to now. I went back to Myanmar with my twin-brother to the same stadium. This time the stadium was only fifty percent full. I asked, “Lord what is happening?” I was discouraged. But the second night, right before I preached, I felt a tap on my shoulder. It was the security guys. He said, “Can you please come to the green room?” A lady was in the green room. She had a large entourage of people. She said, “Evangelist Matt, thank you for making time. Ten years ago, I was in that meeting you had here. I received Jesus and the power of the Holy Spirit. I was one of those 10,000 people who received the fire. My life changed. Do you know who I am?” I didn’t.

She continued, “My name is Miss Anna. Two years ago, through a miracle of the Lord, the people of Myanmar elected the first Christian vice-president and I’m his wife. My husband and I lead together with the president of this nation. Our Christian faith influences the decisions made in this nation.” You never know who is in your crusade.

When I held that crusade, did I have a strategy? No! I was obedient. Did I have money? No! I was obedient. Did we go through storms because the enemy tried

## **HOW TO REACH A CLOSED NATION WITH THE GOSPEL**

to stop us going into Myanmar? Yes! Did we lose people? Oh, yes we did. We faced destruction and storms. But at the moment I started to realize that the storm we went through was linked to the territory, I had the faith to stop the storm. I said, “Whatever happens in this storm, we will reach the other side. There is territory to win.”

Dear evangelist, the Lord is giving you territory. You are called to be territory-takers in Jesus. So much work still needs to be done. There are villages, cities, and nations that need to be won. So, I pray, “Lord, right now for every evangelist, show them that you have given them territory. Show them that the storm they faced over the last few years was linked to their territory. I pray they won’t be stopped by panic or fear but realize what is theirs by right and begin to explore the other side. In Jesus’ mighty name!”



# **HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM**

Siegfried Tomazsewski

## **SYNOPSIS**

Siegfried Tomazsewski teaches on the importance of knowing what should always be the same when we are involved in cross-cultural evangelism and what might change due to culture. There is much wisdom to glean as he shows us that we must always build upon the proper principles while we allow the Holy Spirit to show us the proper methods.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Siegfried worked alongside Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke as European Director of Christ for all Nations (CfaN), for some 18 years. He has preached at large evangelistic campaigns, taught at CfaN Fire Conferences, ministered in churches around the world and has established and founded ministries under Evangelist Bonnke's leadership. Pastor Tomazsewski was born in Germany and worked in various management positions in the commercial world before his "fulltime ministry." He ministered as a youth pastor and elder in a church in the south of Germany for many years where he experienced great growth in the fellowship.

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

Additionally, he also worked as a missionary in the United Arab Emirates. After his Bible school in Erzhausen (Beroa), in 1994 he became ordained with the German Pentecostal Fellowship. He also served as chairman of the PEC 2003 (Berlin/Germany). Siegfried has led many to Christ through mass evangelism and one-on-one witnessing. His passion is to call people to the cross of Christ and impart to others the fire of God that is within him. In 2012, he founded the organization, “Calling Ministry.” He is a sought-after evangelist and conference speaker who has ministered in 44 countries around the world.

For more info, visit: <https://callingministry.org>

## HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM

I've traveled the world to more than 90 countries with different cultures and different types of religious backgrounds. The one thing that they all have in common is people. Even though we talk about different cultures, different regions, different nations, different languages, we must be aware that we are always talking to people. The most frequent question I get asked is this: *Which method is best for our situation here?*

Methods are important. But first, let's talk about principles. The principles found in the Bible never change. When Jesus said His words will never pass away (Matthew 24:35), He was saying that from the very beginning to the end of our time, everything is subject to change with the exception of one thing—His Word. Here are three important principles to keep in mind.

### **1. No matter the culture or generation—God wants all men to be saved.**

Timothy 2:4 (NASB) says, “who wants all people to be saved and to come to a knowledge of the truth.”

### **2. There is no other way to the Father but through Jesus Christ.**

John 14:6 says, “Jesus answered, ‘I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me.’”

**3. We are all called to be witnesses.** Many times, when we hear about evangelism, we think of Billy Graham, Reinhard Bonnke, or other great men and women of God. We see them as the evangelists, and we know we are not like them. But, when it comes to the gospel, Jesus clearly expressed that sharing the gospel is for each and every believer. Isaiah 43:10-11 says, “You are My witnesses, declares the Lord, and My servant, whom I have chosen, so that you may know and believe me and understand that I am He. Before Me no other god was formed, nor will there be one after Me. I, even I, am the Lord, and apart from Me there is no savior.”

Listen to that. There is no one else. Isaiah 44:8 “Do not tremble. Do not be afraid. Did I not proclaim this and foretell it long ago? You are my witnesses...” We see the same in the New Testament. Acts 1:8, “But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses...”

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

To reiterate each principle: First, God wants all men to be saved. Second, there is no other way to the Father but through Jesus Christ. Third, we are all His witnesses. Jesus Himself used those principles wherever He went. The apostles used these principles. We too should also apply these principles in our ministries.

With the main principles established, let's look at the big questions. People ask me which method did Jesus use? Which method did the apostles use? Which method should we use?

Evangelism doesn't always happen from a stage. I believe the gospel has to be shared in every highway, byway, and street corner until it has been heard throughout the ends of the earth. Because of this, there is not just one method of effective evangelism. The gospel message is the same for the whole world. But the method we use to share it, needs to have a cultural application.

You are not the author of the message. You are the messenger. Each of us are messengers of the gospel of Jesus Christ. Also, no matter the method, it should be effective for winning souls. We are not here to entertain people. We are not here to fill churches. We are called to win souls for Jesus Christ.

I was a youth pastor many years ago in a small church in southern Germany. We had a great desire to win our city. As I was on my knees praying, I said, "Lord, how can we reach this generation with the gospel?" I knew of revival going on in Indonesia, in America, and in South America. We called people in Dallas, Texas and asked, "Can you come and help us?" They came, and they helped us. We copied their method. Then we spoke with people from YWAM. We looked at how they were doing evangelism. Sometimes it worked, and sometimes it was an utter failure. I went home, I knelt in front of my bed, I said, "Lord, what did we do wrong? We used exactly the same method."

To this day, I have never forgotten the Lord's reply. He taught me that although principles never change, methods have to be molded by the Holy Spirit for the specific situation, culture, and generation. I have learned that the method I use in my home country cannot simply be translated when I speak to children in Africa

## HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM

or orphans in Asia. I believe we can look at methods that others are using but let the Holy Spirit mold them for your specific situation.

Certainly, crusades are a large part of cross-cultural evangelism. But there is another effective way—church planting. When you are in a country that is not necessarily open to the gospel, starting a business and employing unreached people is effective. As you share the gospel with your employees, you might begin a Bible study or house church. This allows for one-on-one evangelism when you cannot freely go about the city with the message.

If you can boldly share the gospel in your culture, then follow up by holding an event and do what I call buttonhole evangelism. What does that mean? You take people, your friends, your relatives, your neighbors, by the buttonhole and you get them to that event. Or you take them to the church, or to your home and share the gospel with them.

I have an evangelist friend who uses the HBE method. I love that term. This is not to be confused with American HBO television. HBE stands for home-based evangelism. You do this by inviting people to your home for a tea party.

I lived in the Middle East for a couple of years. What is important to these people is quite different than our approach in Western culture. In Germany, when you invite someone to an event you come straight to the point—you don't waste time, you don't talk about anything else. You say, "Hey listen, what I have to tell you is very important." It is completely different in the Middle East. You don't just enter their homes and approach them with the gospel. The first time, you just have a cup of tea. The next time you visit, you talk about your family and then you talk about their family. It is important to establish a relationship and build trust with the person you want to lead to Christ. When that is accomplished, they will begin to ask questions like, "What's different about you?"

Also, in Eastern culture, we look for what is known as a "House of Peace." When traveling in countries that are closed to the gospel, we look for a man or a house of peace where we might stay for the night. When we are welcomed, they are also welcoming the Word of Jesus Christ and then we share the gospel.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

One last method to mention is situational evangelism. Cross-cultural evangelism opens the door for situational evangelism. When you see somebody sick, what do you do? You ask to pray for them. I have never in over forty years of ministry experienced anyone who said, “No, I don’t want that, I want to stay sick.” Everyone wants to be healed. So even in those difficult countries, if they hear there is somebody who is able to heal them, to touch their physical body, they will open up to you.

Maybe you are sitting next to someone reading a book on an airplane. There’s a situation. You might ask, “What are you reading?” However, let me encourage you. No matter what that person’s belief system may be, never speak against any other religion. Jesus never did. Paul said, “Preach Christ crucified” (1 Corinthians 1:23). That’s all we need to do, we don’t need to hammer against their religion—we need to preach Christ and the love of God. This is what is going to change people.

Maybe you come in contact with someone who is having family issues. No matter what culture you find yourself in, when it comes to family situations, people are looking for answers. All of these situations require good listening skills and true compassion. They require that you are fully present and able to offer them hope through Jesus.

No matter the culture, it is important to know the Word of God. I’m sometimes amazed how much people of other religions know why they believe what they believe. They will talk to me for hours. Then, in contrast, I can take young people out into the streets to witness, and I’m amazed how little they know about the Bible when asked.

Let me challenge you. Learn the Word of God. You have to know how to give a defense of the gospel message. Before I went into fulltime ministry, I was a businessman. I trained salespeople. I saw both good and bad salespeople. The bad salespeople were those who did not know anything about their product. They stumbled around with their words. They argued their point. Or they would talk about company things that were not even true. I taught those who wanted to

## HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM

learn to be good salespeople how not to rely on the gimmicks, but to know the product. It is the same for us as we share the gospel. We need to be good Bible students. We need to know how to explain in a biblical manner the things of salvation.

Sometimes people don't even know when they talk to somebody who is not saved, why he needs to be saved or what he needs to be saved from. When I go to another country, people ask me. What do I need to be saved from? I'm not a slave. I'm not in a prison. What do you mean to be saved or to be delivered?

When it comes to other cultures, always highlight the love of God. No other religion can offer what God has offered. He gave His only Son because of love. In all other religions, the people work to earn favor. But the one true God gave us His Son. We need to share that love, no matter the culture. We need to tell them about God's great solution for everyone in every culture. And we also need to speak about the healing, deliverance, and the power of God. People are struggling economically, politically, physically, and relationally. They are facing situations and are looking for help—for answers. We can give them the answer no matter their culture.

I also keep in mind what is known as the “three L methods.”

**1. Listen:** First, every evangelist wants to speak. We are gifted to use our words. We can talk and talk and talk. But there is something far more important than talking—it's listening. The first L in this method reminds us to listen.

It's a big problem for evangelists, Christians, and people in general. Most of us do not know how to listen. Sometimes, in my family dynamic, I realize that I'm not really listening. When my kids were young, they would say to me, “Dad, didn't you listen?” I would say, I'm sorry. Please forgive me. Yes. I didn't listen. I heard you, but hearing doesn't mean listening.” Do we understand the question that is behind the question? Sometimes people are asking us a question and if we do not listen intently, we will miss the real question. We know how to talk, but the important thing is to listen with attention, with respect, without prejudice. Much of the time, we have made up our minds about what is being said before

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

people have finished talking. We have our answer ready. We need to listen with a heart of understanding and hear what they are actually saying.

**2. Learning:** To minister to people of other cultures, you have to be willing to learn. We sometimes have problems with this because we think we have learned everything in our home or school. We then want to tell everyone what we have learned. It does not work when we cross cultures. When you go to a different culture, you have to start from scratch in learning about that culture. We cannot come into that country with the opinion we know it all. We need to learn about the country, about the government, about different religions in the area, about the Christian culture or structure in that country or nation, and about the different denominations.

I was working in a closed area of the world for a couple of years. And it took me years to understand the Christian denominational structure in that area. This wasn't even other religions. It was Christian denominations. It was so difficult to understand how they operated and who was associated with whom. Once I began to understand, the doors opened. I needed to know who to approach. Protocol is very important in many areas of the world. We must learn the ways things are done in that culture if we are to be successful in our mission.

In one nation, I was on my way to preach at a church. They told me to take off my tie. They informed me that the direction my tie was pointing was not acceptable. I didn't say, "No, I'm wearing my tie. You cannot change me. This is my personality." I wouldn't win people over like that. So, I took off my tie. I was sitting on a stage in another country with my interpreter sitting beside me. Like many westerners do, I crossed my legs. My interpreter punched me and said, "Put your leg down. You don't do that here. It shows the people you are not open to them. You need to have your legs side by side, your knees side by side."

Do we want to cast our own way of Christianity over another culture; or do we want to win people for Christ? I asked a young man to be prepared as we traveled to another country. So, on the way to the airport, I asked, "What do you know about the country?" He knew the language they spoke but had not

## HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM

studied anything else. He did not know the dominant religions in that area. He did not know the president's name. I informed him that was important because often when we close our meetings, we pray for the leaders of that country. It often opens doors that otherwise might be closed.

Another important item to know is that the interpreter we choose is vitally important. They need to be knowledgeable concerning our terminology. I was once partnered with a professional translator. He was a professional, but he was secular. When it came to different terminologies like "the anointing," he used other words that did not have the same meaning. I knew it wasn't being translated well because my friends who understood the language were smiling and shaking their heads. We changed the interpreter very quickly. Having the right interpreter is important.

**3. Love:** When we go into other countries, we do not go to condemn, or to judge the people. Jesus never said go into all the world and judge the people. We go with the love of Jesus Christ. Love is not only expressed by our words, but also our deeds. I love to wear belt buckles. And, in one country, not too long ago, I passed by a young man wearing his own belt buckle. I said, "Wow, I like your belt buckle!" Do you know what he did? He opened his belt, took off his belt buckle, and gave it to me as a present. Some people would be offended or not know how to handle such a generous offer. If I would have said, "No, no, no, I cannot take your belt," he would have been terribly disappointed. I would not have reached his heart. So, what did I do? I opened my belt, took off my belt buckle, and gave it to him. We exchanged belt buckles. You may think that's silly, but it's not. Do you know why? His friends looked at us and smiled. They said, "Wow, what a wonderful belt buckle." I asked them if they had time for me to speak with them about something. They said, "Yes! What do you want to tell us?" Now, these five young men had open hearts toward us, and I was able to tell them about Jesus, share the gospel, and pray with them.

This is what it's all about. It's about reaching the hearts of people with love. Love also is translated through my lifestyle. Are we living out our words? Are we sensitive to different cultures? Do we live a Christ-like lifestyle or is my lifestyle

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

a stumbling block for others to receive the word of God? Do they want to listen to me?

We also need to communicate clearly and with honesty. Whatever you say has weight. We need to communicate the truth with respect and humility. Don't show off with a language that is not understood. Many times, we show up with our Bible school knowledge—our Hebrew and Greek dictionaries ready. We think we have to show off what we know. That's a big mistake. Don't show off—show your heart. There is a big difference. Ask them questions. Allow them to ask questions. Be yourself, be genuine, be honest, and don't listen to the lies of the devil. Listen to the prompting of the Holy Spirit.

1 Corinthians 9:19-22 says, “Though I am free and belong to no one, I have made myself a slave to everyone, to win as many as possible. To the Jews I became like a Jew, to win the Jews. To those under the law I became like one under the law (though I myself am not under the law), so as to win those under the law. To those not having the law I became like one not having the law (though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law), so as to win those not having the law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to all people so that by all possible means I might save some.”

Look at Romans 14:15, “If your brother or sister is distressed because of what you eat, you are no longer acting in love. Do not by your eating destroy someone for whom Christ died.” If you are aware that something is not acceptable in the culture where you are, don't do it. Even if it is something you are used to doing. Do what's proper, what is protocol in that culture to win the people and do not become a stumbling block.

We need to rely on the power of the Holy Spirit. We have looked at principles, methods, theology, and our own personal witnessing. But here, in my opinion, is the most important point. Do as much as you can to learn about the culture but know that we need the power of the Holy Spirit. There is not one right way to share the gospel. It's different in every culture and generation. But I believe there's one thing that always remains the same—the power of the Holy Spirit.

## HOW TO DO CROSS-CULTURAL EVANGELISM

John 15:4 reads, “Remain in me, as I also remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in me.”

For many years, I didn’t really understand this Scripture. We have to be in Him, and He in us. But one day at the coast, I watched divers go into the depths of the ocean and come up with sea sponges. Picture a sea sponge full of water. Now a sponge is a living being. It lives down on the ground of the ocean. It’s alive and full of water. When these divers brought the sponges to the surface, they were soft.

Everyone loves the soft touch of a sponge. But if you leave it out of the water and in the sun, it will become dry and hard. Jesus says, “Remain in Me.” If the sponge is in the water, the water is also in the sponge. If we are in Jesus, the Holy Spirit is in us and we are connected to Him. That will be the lifeline for many people. Why? Because we are soft, we are tender, we are filled with the love of God. Make sure you stay connected. Zechariah 4:6 says, “Not by might nor by power but by my spirit, says the Lord Almighty.” We need the Spirit of God in us—the power of God in us.

2 Timothy 1:6 reads, “For this reason, I remind you to fan into flame the gift of God, which is in you through the laying on of my hands.” I love barbecue. One day, I invited my friends to a barbecue party. I had a brand-new barbecue grill. I was proud of it and showed it off. My friends were not so interested. I showed them how to make fire for the barbecue. They watched but were not interested. I came out of the kitchen with wonderful food and gave it to them. They didn’t want it. Why not? Because it has not gone through the fire yet. They were not interested in my fire. They were not interested in the grill. They were interested in what I had to give them. Listen, people are not interested in your fire. They are interested in what comes from your life because of the fire.

I encourage you to allow the wind of the Holy Spirit to blow into your life, to rekindle your fire, to fan it into flame like Paul instructed Timothy. The fire of God burns with the love of Jesus Christ. That love will go to any culture around

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

the globe to seek out those who are lost. Isaiah 10:27 (NKJV) says, “It shall come to pass that day that is, this burden will be taken away from your shoulder and his yoke from your neck and the yoke will be destroyed because of the anointing oil.” In days past, people wore yokes. This was a piece of wood on their shoulder to carry buckets with water. Sometimes it seems to me like Christians have a yoke they carry, and the devil fills it with sin and filth. They come to church and lay down their yoke. They empty their bucket. This makes them feel happy. They seem so light and refreshed. But when the preacher says, “Amen,” they pick it up again and they go home. The devil then fills that bucket again. But this passage of Scripture doesn’t tell us to empty our buckets. It says, “*The anointing breaks the yoke.*”

If a yoke is broken into two pieces, you can’t just put it back onto your shoulders. It won’t stay. This is what we are called to do. People have the yoke of sin on their shoulders—no matter their culture. The power of God in you, the anointing of Jesus Christ, will break the yoke. In the name of Jesus, we are called to go and break those yokes. They need to go home without their buckets. Jesus has given us living water to give out. It doesn’t require holding onto those buckets! Be yourself. Be open to people. Learn, listen, love, and be filled with the power of the Holy Spirit. I pray that not one of you will go without the anointing of the Holy Spirit.

# PROPHETIC EVANGELISM

Matthew Helland

## SYNOPSIS

The experience Matthew Helland has gained in knowing how to prophetically minister in love to those who desperately need Jesus is obvious in this lesson. He clearly lays out for us the foundation for understanding and growing in prophecy and prophetic evangelism. This chapter will equip you to know how to pursue prophecy in your ministry, the different ways to operate in this gift, and how to correctly steward prophetic evangelism.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Since 2010, Matthew Helland has been conducting schools of prophecy. He has authored three books on the subjects of prophecy, healing, and power evangelism. He is based in Amsterdam, the Netherlands where he has planted two churches. He is currently the lead pastor of Iglesia Vida Nueva. Together with his wife Femke, they work with “Scarlet Cord” which helps stop human trafficking and gives people the tools to get out prostitution([www.scarletcord.work](http://www.scarletcord.work)). Their online school, “RUAH School of Prophecy,” operates in four languages across the world.

For more info, visit: <https://www.prophesyandheal.com>





**P**rophecy and evangelism have a lot to do with one another. We see this in the words of one of my favorite prophets, the Apostle John. He was the beloved disciple of Jesus who reclined on the chest of Jesus (see John 13:23). In Revelation, Chapter 19, John is in the middle of an incredible encounter where he sees an angel. He says, “At this I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said to me, ‘Don’t do that. I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers and sisters who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For it is the Spirit of prophecy who bears testimony to Jesus’” (Revelation 19:10). The spirit of prophecy is to testify about Jesus—testifying about Jesus is the heart of prophecy.

At times, prophecy can make God’s presence real to unbelievers better than a good argument or wise saying. Check out what Paul says, “But if an unbeliever or an inquirer comes in while everyone is prophesying, they are convicted of sin and are brought under judgment by all, as the secrets of their hearts are laid bare. So they will fall down and worship God, exclaiming, ‘God is really among you’” (1 Corinthians 14:24-25)! *Legitimate prophetic ministry exalts Jesus and helps people get to know Him.*

Every week my wife and I visit prostitutes who work in Amsterdam’s Red-Light District. We get to go behind the curtains to talk to them and help them with practical help to be able to get out of prostitution. We also pray and prophesy over them.

Understand that prophesying over someone does not mean that you are foretelling their future, instead you are primarily simply forthtelling the thoughts and emotions of God. The heart of New Testament prophecy is testifying about Jesus as well as strengthening, encouraging, and comforting people by communicating God’s heart to them (see 1 Cor. 14:3). Though foretelling the future can take place at times, prophetic ministry is primarily forthtelling not foretelling. Therefore, often I pray and say such thing as, “God loves you. God has a hope and a future for you. He wants you to know Him as your Father and understand that you can be His dearly beloved daughter.” In the midst of these prayers, many times God speaks about other things in their lives as well.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Because we do this on a weekly basis, throughout the years, we have been able to help many people get out of prostitution. This process of quitting prostitution at times has been initiated by a prayer or a prophetic insight.

One lady who I was visiting for the first time, thought I was a potential client as I approached her. I let her know that I was a pastor and not a potential client. Then I asked, “Do you want to know what God wants to tell you?” She did and I began telling her what God gave me to say. Tears ran down her face and she responded, “I was just asking God about that this morning and now you are telling me the answers to my prayers.” Then I asked her if she had back pain. She did, so I prayed for her, and her back pain disappeared.

Another woman came over and said, “Hey, Pastor Mateo, I had a dream last night. Could you interpret my dream for me?” As she told me her dream, I asked the Lord what it meant. When I gave her the interpretation, she started weeping saying it was all true. She ran upstairs, put her clothes on, and left prostitution. She has never come back. Why? Because God spoke to her right where she was. Prophetic ministry makes God’s love tangible and real as we share the gospel not just at church, but anywhere, even at a brothel.

One of the first women we helped get out of prostitution told me that she was afraid of becoming a Christian. We told her not to worry about that because we would help her even if she was not interested in becoming a Christian. Then one day she had a large party at her house where we were also invited to come. One of my friends came and told her, “God is going to use you as a Christian leader and you are going to bring many new people to Matt and Femke’s church. God also wants to heal your back and your knee.”

She thought my friend was crazy and responded, “I just wish I could stop drinking alcohol.” From working in prostitution for over 16 years, she had become an alcoholic. My friend responded, “OK, the next time you drink alcohol you are not going to like it.” That evening she had a beer, yet it did not taste very good at all. The next day she had a pounding headache. She never really experienced

## PROPHETIC EVANGELISM

hangovers, but now her head was hurting. Two months later, she realized she had not drunk even one drop of alcohol. Jesus had set her free.

Nevertheless, one day she was feeling angry and thought, “Maybe I will go back to my old life. Pastor Mateo is not around, maybe I can go back to drinking and partying like before.” That night she had a dream where she was driving a jeep rapidly down a cliff into a drop off. Suddenly in the dream, God spoke to her using my voice saying, “You are my dearly beloved daughter and in you I am well pleased.” In the dream she slammed the breaks and climbed out of the jeep saying, “I am never going back to my old life again.”

This woman is now one of the key leaders of our church. On Tuesdays, she cooks food for a lot of people at her house and nearly every time we meet, new people come to that Bible study. God has not only set her free from prostitution, but she also has experienced healing, deliverance, and simply a totally new life in Christ. She says, “Practical help to get out of prostitution is important, but what got me out and kept me out of prostitution is the love of God.”

God not only continues to amaze us in our work with prostitutes, but He also used a divine encounter to let us know it was his will for us to begin doing this kind of ministry.

One day I was at a grocery store in Munich, Germany. Suddenly I heard a Colombian woman speaking in Spanish. I turned to her and asked her if I could share God’s thoughts with her. She said yes. I began to prophesy over her in the produce section of the grocery store and her jaw nearly dropped to the floor. “Everything you are saying is true. How do you know that?”

We ended up going to her house the next day where there was large group of Latin Americans for whom we got to pray and share Jesus with. I then told her that I was praying about whether or not it was God’s will for me to start reaching out to prostitutes in Amsterdam every week. She responded, “Now I know why God wanted me to meet you.”

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

She told me, “When I was seventeen, I came to Germany thinking I was going to become a nanny for small children. Instead, I was forced into prostitution. I became addicted to drugs and became hopeless as every evening my pimp would come and take all of my money from me. I did not see a way out until Christians began faithfully visiting me every week. They helped me study the Bible and help me get out of prostitution.” Liliana is now an evangelist, and her testimony was God’s way of confirming to us that it was His will that we help people out who are in a similar situation to the one she was in.

I am thankful to God for all of the testimonies of changed lives we have seen throughout the years and also keenly aware of the importance of prophetic ministry when we share the gospel. Growing up, I never really understood how prophetic ministry worked. It seemed like a mystical and weird kind of ministry where God would only speak to us at special moments when there was a special anointing. It was something we believed in yet did not really understand. In 2010 however, I was mentored by a prophet who gave me the biblical principles to not only grow in prophecy, but train people around the world in prophecy. Here are some important principles to understand if you want to grow in prophetic ministry.

- 1. Be Full of Love and Eagerly Desire to Prophecy:** Paul wrote that we should, “Follow the way of love and eagerly desire gifts of the Spirit, especially prophecy.” (1 Cor. 14:1) First of all, you’ve got to love people. If you don’t love people, do not prophesy. If you want to have authority, you need to love people. But then, Paul says, “...and eagerly desire gifts of the Spirit, especially prophecy.”

To eagerly desire means just that: *to eagerly desire!* When I saw the woman, who is now my wife, in New York City, I did not say, “Oh God, if it’s Your will, will you let her be my wife?” No, I eagerly desired her. I went after her. I sent her emails. I called her. I got on a plane and came to the Netherlands. I got down on one knee and said, “Will you marry me?”

But if I would have said, “Lord, if it’s Your will for her to be my wife, let it happen.” Then, when the relationship didn’t materialize and never happened

because I never pursued it, the obvious default response would have been, “*I guess You didn’t let it happen so it must not have been Your will.*” Understand that it is God’s will for you to be able to grow in spiritual gifts and especially so you might prophesy. But you have the responsibility to eagerly desire to grow them. God wants us to desire to speak in tongues, heal the sick, get words of knowledge, and above all, prophesy.

2. **Prophecy by Faith:** “We have different gifts according to the grace given to each of us. If your gift is to prophesy, then prophesy in accordance with your faith” (Romans 12:6). In other words, if you have much faith to prophesy, you will prophesy much. But if you have little faith to prophesy, you will prophesy little.

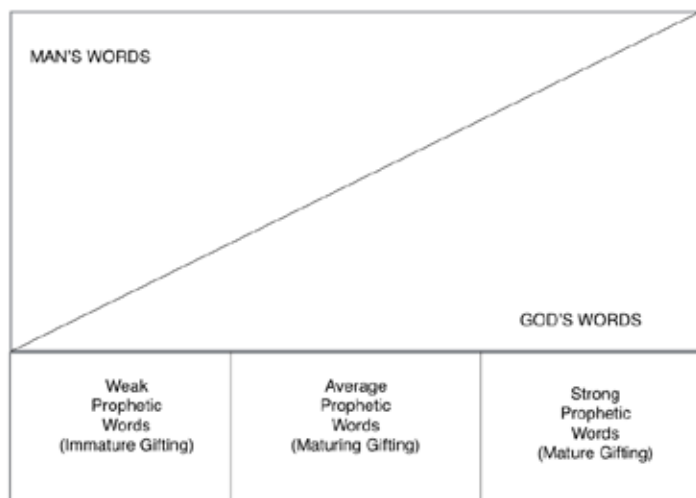
If you want to do prophetic evangelism, you have got to move in faith. By the way, faith is spelled R-I-S-K. You have got to take a risk. I rarely know ahead of time what God will ask me to say or do. When I’m about to prophesy to someone in front of me, I usually have no clue what to say. But as I open my mouth, God begins to speak through me. People may think, “Wow, he must know so much.” But I really don’t know very much at all. The Bible says in Psalm 81:10b, “...Open wide your mouth and I will fill it.” If you want to grow in prophetic words of knowledge, and healing, you’ve got to have faith. This kind of faith is spelled R-I-S-K.

Gary Best, in his book, “Naturally Supernatural” talks about this. He recounts a vision he had where he was on a diving board. As he looked down, the swimming pool beneath him had no water. Then, he heard God tell him to jump! He took issue with the Lord because there was no water in the pool, but again, God told him to jump! Gary continued to argue with God complaining about the stupidity and impending pain of jumping into a pool without water. However, he ultimately obeyed, and the moment he leapt off the diving board, God filled the swimming pool with water. If you want to move in prophecy, if you want to see lives changed, you’ve got to take risks.

I once asked a Prophet how she did prophetic evangelism. I asked if she waited for a sign. She taught me that you just have to have the courage to walk up to someone and give them a message from God. So that night I went

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

to Walgreens, QuikTrip, and Wal-Mart. I walked up to someone and shared what God put on my heart. It was really scary. I had all kinds of amazingly, beautiful experiences. I was also stopped by a policeman because someone thought that I was crazy. Since then, I've learned there's a good way to give a message to people and there are also ways that we want to avoid. It is scary and risky. People may think you are crazy, but people might be touched by God through your words. There is nothing like seeing when somebody's heart is touched by a word from God. When they say, "How did you know that?" You are then able to minister the words of God to their heart. When we first started going to the Red-Light District, many of the people who rejected me are now followers of Jesus. If you want to see people come to know Christ through a word from God, you have got to have courage to share a word from God to them



3. **Understand that Growing in Prophetic Ministry is a Process:** Mike Bickle in his book "Growing in the Prophetic" gives us a very helpful diagram. On the bottom left we see how a person who has an immature prophetic gifting or is just learning will have most of their words coming out of their own heart and a little coming out of God's mind. But the more that a person grows,

## PROPHETIC EVANGELISM

the more that the words they speak will be from God and not just from their own mind. Yet even, a highly experienced prophet can give prophecies that contain words that are from their own heart and not from God's heart. This is why Paul tells us to, "Do not quench the Spirit. Do not treat prophecies with contempt but test them all; hold on to what is good, reject every kind of evil" (1 Thess. 5:19-22).

This is why it is important to create a safe place where people can be taught and trained in how to prophesy in a way that is biblical and sound. Prophetic ministry is something that should be cultivated intentionally. You need to learn how to receive and give prophetic words that must always be tested.



- 4. Understand the Different Levels of Prophetic Ministry:** There are at least three levels of prophetic ministry. At the lowest level, the spirit of prophecy, everybody can prophesy (see Revelation 19:10). This happens when the presence of God is strong during worship or when there is a leader with a strong prophetic gifting who challenges everybody to prophesy, and



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

everybody can do it. We see this in the Bible take place in 1 Samuel 10:19-12; 19:18-23 and 1 Corinthians 14:24-25. At this level, people should only prophesy in a way that strengthens, encourages, and comforts, *avoiding all high-risk prophecies!* (I.E. No babies, marriages, deaths, healings, or political elections)

The second level is the gift of prophecy which is one of the nine gifts shared in 1 Corinthians 12:5-11. A person who has the gift of prophecy needs no strong worship or a leader to challenge them in order to prophesy. They can prophesy at any time and any place by faith. However, just because a person can prophesy does not make them a prophet.

### 5. **Make an Intentional Plan in How You Can Grow in Prophetic Ministry and Prophetic Evangelism:**

There are many great books and resources available to help you grow intentionally in prophetic ministry. Find people's books, videos, and schools from whom you can learn in order to grow in prophetic ministry. More importantly find other people with whom you can regularly prophesy, get words of knowledge, pray for the sick, etc. Also, put in your calendar every week when you will either practice or go to a public shopping center or area to talk with people and share His love and power with them. For me that is planning my two-to-three hours every week that I go to the Red-Light District.

### 6. **Share A Prophetic Word:** Here are a few ways you can share a prophetic word from God. They are, Scripture, a picture, or an emotion.

**A. Use Scripture to Prophecy,** The Holy Bible is God's Word and we can strengthen, encourage, and comfort people using a Bible verse, story, or worship song.

**B. Use a Vision or a Picture to Prophecy,** We can get a picture from God with the eye of our imagination. This doesn't mean you will necessarily see heaven open and angels come down. No, it has more to do with seeing pictures in our minds. Sometimes these pictures are literally words of knowledge and at other times they are simply a metaphor of something God may want to say to someone. At times you can also use a physical object

to give an encouraging message to someone. Jesus was the master of using objects and parables to tell stories. We can do the same.

**C. Pay Attention to Your Feelings and Thoughts:** At times I feel drawn to share a message with someone—this can be the leading of the Holy Spirit. Sometimes I don't just pray for that person, but I send them an encouraging word. Then I may get a message back simply thanking me and at other times I find out it was an accurate word for them that came at the moment they needed it most. Do not discount thoughts or ideas that could be coming from the Holy Spirit. Remember that the Holy Spirit lives inside of you and that we do have the mind of Christ (see 1 Corinthians 2:16) The challenge is learning how to regularly tune into what Jesus wants to say to us and through us to others.

**D. Flip any Negative Pictures or Feelings:** If you see something negative, don't be negative—flip it around. Let me give an example. A woman approached me once and said, "Pastor, I'm going to die. I'm going to die!" I asked her what gave her those thoughts. "I'm going to die because I had a vision. I was in a coffin." I told her, "No, you need to be baptized. The Bible is very clear that when we're baptized, we identify with the death of Jesus." And then I baptized her.

If you see a spirit of addiction on someone, the last thing you need to do is say, "I see your addiction. I see suicide." What you prophesy has power. You begin to prophesy the opposite. You begin to prophesy the potential in that person. "I speak freedom over you. I speak life." Begin to minister, not from your heart, but from the heart of God.

I work with lots of different kinds of prophets. Some of us have a heightened sense of smell. Maybe we smell adultery or drugs on a person. The last thing you do is focus on the scent. No, you focus on the gospel. You focus on the love of God. People know they are sinners. They need to hear the hope that God has for them. Why is this so important? Because (God's words) are "... life to those who find them and health to one's whole body" (Proverbs 4:22). What we focus on grows and we need to help people focus on Jesus and not their sinfulness.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

7. **Avoid Charismatic Witchcraft:** Charismatic witchcraft is when someone tries to use a “word from God” to manipulate or pressure someone to do something. No one can *force* anyone to do something they don’t want to do through a word from God. However, it is critical that we are vigilant to uphold integrity of heart before the Lord. We must actively honor people and never use prophetic ministry to shame, dishonor, or manipulate someone. Prophetic ministry is to strengthen, encourage, and comfort people, and we in ministry, must be full of love, faith, and humility before the Lord both as believers and in our prophetic walk.
8. **Read Your Bible and Pray Every Day:** Prophetic ministry is *not* for lazy Christians who refuse to cultivate their own personal relationship with God through spiritual disciplines such as prayer and Bible Study. It is also essential to serve and be a part of a local church. Jesus stressed the importance of a servant’s heart in Matthew 20:28 saying, “...the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve.” And if our Lord pursued such a heart, how much more must we do the same. Furthermore, it behooves us to be mentored and taught by other leaders, but also mentor and teach younger leaders. The best way to grow in anything is to teach and to give away to others that which God has given to you. This is why I thoroughly enjoy training and empowering others to do everything God has equipped me to do.

On the day of Pentecost, the Apostle Peter quoted the prophet Joel when he said, “In the last days, God says, I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and your daughters will prophesy, your young men will see visions, your old men will dream dreams. Even on my servants, both men and women, I will pour out my Spirit in those days and they will prophesy” (Acts 2:17-18).

Peter also said that whenever we speak, we should speak the very words of God (see 1 Peter 4:11). Jesus said that when we share the gospel people who listen to us are actually listening to God (see Luke 10:16). If they reject us, they are really rejecting God. In Luke 12:12, He also said that when we stand before leaders, we are not to worry about what to say because at that moment the Holy Spirit will show us exactly what to say. Prophetic Evangelism, sharing the gospel by

## **PROPHETIC EVANGELISM**

sharing the very words Jesus wants to speak to them at that moment is part of our responsibility.

I spent over seven years of my life as a student at Oral Roberts University. Every day we saw the mandate God gave to Oral Roberts. God told him to, “Raise up your students to hear My voice, to go where My light is dim, where My voice is heard small, and My healing power is not known, even to the uttermost bounds of the earth. Their work will exceed yours, and in this I am well pleased.”

Learning to hear God’s voice and making His voice heard around the world is a great description of Prophetic Evangelism. As people learn to hear God’s voice, lives are changed, bodies are healed, chains are broken. This is why we should be “eager to prophesy” wherever we go and especially when sharing the gospel. 1 Corinthians 14:39 is a great description of Prophetic Evangelism.



# **HELPING OTHERS THROUGH THE POWER OF FAITH**

Teo Hayashi

## **SYNOPSIS**

Teo Hayashi teaches us to have confidence that God will back up His message with signs and wonders. We are to pray for boldness to preach the word, have assurance in our hearts, and hope-filled minds as we confidently give to others what we have received from Jesus.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Teófilo Hayashi is the founder of “Dunamis Movement,” a revival focused campus ministry with chapters in over 400 universities in the nations. Dunamis also holds conferences across the globe and through their multiple training schools, equipping students to become marketplace leaders that carry Kingdom influence in society. Teo has traveled to over 40 nations preaching the gospel and seeing the miraculous power of God touch people from all walks of life. He and his wife Junia are the senior leaders of Zion Church, a thriving, multi-site megachurch

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

that is impacting not only the metropolis of São Paulo, but Brazil as a whole. Teo holds degrees in psychology and theology, has authored several books, and is part of the Colab that leads “The Send,” a global ministry that mobilizes youth to embrace a missional lifestyle. Teo and Junia have two boys, Zach and Koa and live in São Paulo, Brazil.

For more info, visit: [www.dynamismovement.com/en/](http://www.dynamismovement.com/en/)

I love the Book of Acts. I see the Book of Acts as a model of how the church should operate in the world. When I say church, I am referring to the *ekklesia*—the body of Christ, the cultural agency of the Kingdom of sent-out ones. These were those sent out into what we know today as Asia Minor or Europe. They planted churches, won souls, and established the Kingdom of God upon the earth. My heart burns for the same. I'm sure yours does as well. I want to highlight Acts 4, but to do so, we must start in Acts 2. I am sure you know very well about Pentecost—the day the Holy Spirit was poured out on the 120 in the upper room.

As Peter and the others leave the upper room, they go out in the power of God. Because of that, people come to Christ. They embrace the gospel of Jesus Christ. Signs and wonders followed the believers as they preached the gospel. A manifestation of the supernatural confirmed their message. That is key, because maybe more than ever, we need the supernatural to accompany our preaching. The supernatural brings the endorsement of heaven on the message.

Following the events of Pentecost, Peter and John go to the temple to worship. As they approach the temple, they encounter a lame man begging for money. Acts 3:4 “Peter looked straight at him, as did John. Then Peter said, “Look at us!” Notice Peter brings attention to both he and John. He fixes his eyes upon the man and tells him to look back at them. It's time for us to do the same—to be so confident in what we carry that we are looking directly at those who are hurting and need Jesus. We must directly look at people who need salvation, who are lost, who are desperate. We need to have the confidence, the faith, to say, “Look at me! I'm going to help you. Look at me! I know you are in need of money, but that's not the fullness of your need. I have what you need. Therefore, look at me!

The Bible goes on to say, “So the man gave them his attention, expecting to get something from them.” (Acts 3:5). The lame man gave them the attention. His expectation was probably in something else—most likely money. However, his heart was open, he was hungry.



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

We can say the same for today's society. We live in a society that is hungry. People are expecting to receive something that will help them escape their current situation. We know, in many cases, they are looking for love in all the wrong places. They're looking for justice through the wrong means. They are seeking peace in ways that make it impossible.

That's exactly what the lame man thought, "I need money." And as Peter and John approached him, he must have thought that is what they were offering. We shouldn't look down on this lame man. We should have compassionate eyes that see him. As the Lord's people, we need to understand and have compassion on a world that is so desperate and hungry that, many times, their behaviors, the things we see in the world, are nothing but desperation to fill the void.

"Then Peter said, 'Silver or gold I do not have, but what I do have I give you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, walk.' Taking him by the right hand, he helped him up, and instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong" (Acts 3:6-7). The lame man was completely healed. He thought he was going to receive a temporary money fix, instead Peter fixed his eyes on him and pulled the man into complete restoration. It's true that many people in the Kingdom are turned off by those begging for money. But I am so filled with faith in Peter and John's example of looking beyond this beggars' circumstances and into the desperation of his heart.

We need to look at the world and show them that Jesus has solutions for the things that concern them. The youth culture today fights for justice, they want people to feel loved and accepted. They fight for what feels right to them even if sometimes it looks dark to us. Will you look past their outward demeanor and look into their hearts?

Now, what happened to the lame man is an exuberant miracle! Everyone knows him as the beggar who sat at the entrance to the temple. Now, he's jumping up and down. He's worshipping Jesus. It created an environment for Peter to preach on Solomon's Portico—outside of the temple. I feel this is so significant because the Lord is asking us to take the gospel of the Kingdom outside of the

## HELPING OTHERS THROUGH THE POWER OF FAITH

four walls of our church buildings. Solomon's Portico is equivalent to what we would consider the marketplace today. I'm believing for marketplace apostles. I'm believing for marketplace prophets. I believe we will see ministers in the marketplace just like we have seen in traditional evangelistic crusades, or pulpits.

These are men and women of God that God raises up in this generation to go into the marketplace. When I say marketplace, I'm referring to education reform, I'm referring to politics and government, and I'm referring to the business world. I really believe if we want to dream about the transformation of cities, if we want to dream of a nation being saved in one day, we need to look to the marketplace.

Peter preached at the marketplace, and many came to Jesus. However, it became a problem because Peter didn't mince words. And the Jewish leaders wanted to know who had given him authority to preach that way. He addressed the Jewish leaders by saying essentially,, "Jesus did. He is the Messiah and you guys killed him. You killed Jesus of Nazareth." Then he tells them they need to repent.

When Peter preached the gospel, thousands of people came to Jesus. What an altar call! "But many who heard the message believed; so the number of men who believed grew to about five thousand" (Acts 4:4). The first time Peter preached, three thousand came to Christ. Now there's five thousand. The church is booming and growing by leaps and bounds. Of course, that bothered the religious leaders who persecuted Peter and John and threw them into jail. While in chains, they are beaten.

Peter and John are about to be released, but they are given instructions. Then they called them in again and commanded them not to speak or teach at all in the name of Jesus. "But Peter and John replied, 'Which is right in God's eyes: to listen to you, or to him? You be the judges! As for us, we cannot help speaking about what we have seen and heard.' After further threats they let them go. They could not decide how to punish them, because all the people were praising God for what had happened. For the man who was miraculously healed was over forty years old" (Acts 4:18-22).

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Peter and John basically put the ball in the hands of the Sanhedrin. They said, “Do what you think is right, we will not fear man—but God.” Listen, I believe the Lord will pour out His Spirit upon the church in such a powerful manner that many signs and wonders will be seen. Because of that, people will say, “I cannot deny what I have witnessed.” Many times, in our evangelistic efforts, we simply have great arguments. It’s not enough to argue people into the Kingdom. I’m not against biblical arguments. Some people are convicted as they consider truth in that manner. But what I’m saying is the Lord has made available to us, His people, the power of the Holy Spirit. Because of that, signs and wonders shall follow our gospel message. Every time you look up the word *signs* in the Gospel of John it directly refers to the supernatural, to miracles.

God Himself has given us the power to perform signs. As performers of signs, those who witness the supernatural through us will have to say, “I cannot deny what I have seen or heard.” As we perform the greater works, they will endorse the message of the Gospel of the Kingdom. Signs and wonders cause others to be put in the position of judging what they see and responding accordingly. In this case, the Sanhedrin had no way of punishing them and they let them go.

I believe confidence is rising up in the people of God. As we see the evidence of the power of the Kingdom—the sick healed, the lame walk, the blind see, the dead raised, captives released—we have confidence. As our confidence grows, we continually manifest the Kingdom of God through our lives. That can be said for the apostles, too. Peter and John left the presence of the Sanhedrin and went straight to a prayer meeting. The church was praying; prayer is the key.

The apostles dealt with persecution, trials, and great pressure. Many Christians today pray for deliverance and supernatural protection from having to go through anything, but not these guys. They prayed, “Now, Lord, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness.” (Acts 4:29). They did not ask the Lord for protection or for deliverance. They didn’t inform God that they had been threatened. They knew God was not ignorant of what had happened, so they didn’t petition God with the latest newsflash, “God, you know, that we have been threatened.” Instead, they wanted more boldness! It

## HELPING OTHERS THROUGH THE POWER OF FAITH

was like they were saying, “Now that you see the threats, grant us even more boldness.” The Greek word used here is *parresia*, which literally means the boldness of free speech. They’re praying, God, free our speech, empower us to speak boldly. We need a supernatural unction of courage that will allow us to speak freely so that we might share the full gospel.

Understand, they’re not asking for protection. They’re asking for more boldness. They weren’t going to run and hide. They wanted boldness to speak the truth even when resisted by the religious leaders. They wanted to spiritually charge at darkness by being bright light. They wanted to bring havoc to the enemy’s camp. Then in Acts 4:30 they pray, “Stretch out your hand to heal and perform signs and wonders through the name of your holy servant Jesus.”

This is what they understood. If they could get boldness, their speech would be freed up. If their speech was free, they could preach the full gospel message. As they preached, God’s hand would be stretched out to heal through signs and wonders in the name of Jesus.

As you are bold in the proclamation of the Gospel of the Kingdom, guess what? Parallel to your preaching is a stretched-out hand that will endorse your words by healing the sick and opening the eyes of the blind. These hands will perform signs and wonders that will endorse the message that you preach. Many times, what I’ve seen, is under persecution, under opposition, the Lord says, “If you will boldly step out and continue to speak my word, I will break through with the supernatural.” And it’s the supernatural that will cause people to say, “I cannot deny what I have witnessed.” That’s what I’m seeking, and I want to encourage you to do the same. Romans 10:17 says, “So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (NKJV). As the word of God comes into your ears, faith is generated in your spirit.

We also read in Hebrews 11:1, “Now faith is confidence in what we hope for and assurance about what we do not see.” Check this out, faith is an actual substance. It’s a here and now substance. Faith does not happen in your mind. Faith does not happen in your body. Faith happens in your spirit.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

These are men of faith that will walk in and say, “Look at me! I have what you need.” These are men of faith that will point their fingers at the Jews that killed Jesus and say “You killed the Messiah. But if you will repent, salvation is here.” These are men of faith who look at the Sanhedrin after they’ve just been released from jail and say, “You tell me if it’s right to not speak of what we have witnessed—what we have seen and heard.

These are men of faith who in a prayer meeting don’t ask for protection or deliverance. They ask for boldness to speak the gospel message. Why are these men so filled with faith? These men are filled with faith because they had heard the word of the Lord. And as they hear the word of the Lord, faith is generated in their spirit. They have confident assurance that God will back them up.

Hope is different. It happens in your mind. Your mind creates a narrative to expect the transition of what is the substance in the spirit to manifest in the physical.

So, when you have faith, the substance of it is in your spirit. That substance is the Holy Spirit waiting for the physical act of obedience to manifest in signs and wonders, in miracles, in provision, or in deliverance in the physical realm. Hope happens in your mind. As you hope, you’re looking at this faith.

You may ask, “Tao, how do you know when faith is there?” I just say, “I just know. I have this assurance and the Lord tells me He’s going to heal people. Go after healing” If it’s midday and I have a meeting that same night, my mind begins to create a narrative. Faith is present and assurance takes place. Then my mind creates the narrative, “Tonight, healings are going to break out. The Holy Spirit is going to break in with signs and wonders. My mind is filled with hope.”

Hope without the foundation of faith is merely optimism. What God wants us to do is to be people who hear the word of God and allow faith to be generated. Once it’s generated, Paul says in Romans 10:10, “For it is with your heart that you believe and are justified, and it is with your mouth that you profess your faith and are saved.” Why is that? Because faith operates in your spirit, in your heart.

## **HELPING OTHERS THROUGH THE POWER OF FAITH**

Paul also says in 1 Thessalonians 5:8, “But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and as a helmet the hope of salvation.” Why would we put on the breastplate? Because it’s protecting the actual place where faith resides which is your heart.

Paul also says that faith is a helmet—the hope of salvation. Why do we have a helmet to protect hope? Because hope happens in your mind. The apostles had hope! They knew if they spoke boldly that signs and wonders would come through the outstretched hand of Jesus.

I want to encourage you. When you find yourself in the midst of opposition—ask for boldness. When you are in the middle of a trial—operate in faith. When you are under persecution—ask for free speech. And as you speak out, you will see His hand stretch out.



# THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

Travis Holownia

## SYNOPSIS

Travis Holownia teaches every evangelist what it takes to finish well in the ministry. By asking us to look at the condition of our hearts, he refocuses us on what God requires of His evangelists in order to show forth His glory through our lives.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Travis Holownia has a great passion for God and for people. His greatest desire is to see this generation experience what it means to live in the power and presence of the Holy Spirit. Travis is the visionary leader of “Resurgence Initiatives,” a movement started in 2008 seeking to inspire people to arise together. Resurgence gathers and releases people who expect the impossible, experience God’s love, empower those around them, and engage in expanding God’s Kingdom. Travis has travelled across Canada (multiple times to Canada’s Arctic) and has ministered internationally.

For more info, visit: <https://liveresurgence.com>





## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

I lead a movement in Canada called “Resurgence Initiatives” and our mandate is to reach souls, to revive the church, and to release leaders. My heart burns for people to come to know Jesus and to release leaders who lead others to Christ.

I was a computer engineer by training. At 23-years-old I felt God’s voice leading me to quit my job. I was about to be a VP of an oil company and I quit to enter fulltime ministry. The evangelistic call on my life actually started at a youth conference. I was fourteen and remember the speaker said the mission of Jesus is to, “Go!” I thought, “What can I do? I’m fourteen.” But I went back to my junior high school and told them I wanted to start a Christian club. I wanted to find a way to reach my school.

When I entered high school, I thought about how I could reach my high school of 2200 students and started another club. My youth pastor said, “Hey Travis. Why don’t we hold an all-school assembly? So, we planned an assembly for a Saturday night. 400 of my friends showed up. We had lights, a stage, and we had a band. Then, my youth pastor challenged me to share my story. I thought, “I don’t have a story. I grew up in a Christian home. How is my story going to impact lives?” I remember being in the boys’ locker room in that gymnasium. I can remember the smell. If you’ve ever been in the boys’ locker room, you know the smell—sweat and urinals. I can remember that smell, but also the smell of fear. The fear of stepping out. The fear of sharing something and not knowing what was going to happen. And I remember standing on that stage. As I shared my story, eighteen of my classmates put their hands up to accept Jesus into their life. I knew then that God was calling me to something.

I think back to the past few years where we’ve had opportunities to go to northern Canadian communities of about 400 people. These communities have been ravaged by teen suicide. It’s amazing to see lives changed in these northern communities for Jesus. I’ve also held youth conferences where thousands of people put their hands up for Jesus. I remember being in Belmopan, Belize on a hot night. We were doing evangelistic outreach in a gymnasium and this young boy grabbed my shirt and said, “Travis!” I had a name tag on, so he knew my name. I asked, “What’s your name?” He responded, “It’s Seven.” I said, “How

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

old are you?” He goes, “I’m eleven.” I made a joke about 7-Eleven, but he didn’t understand. Then he said, “I want to go inside. Can you get me inside?” I took him inside that night. And do you know, the first person that night to put his hand up to experience Jesus was my friend Seven. He was the first to run to the altar. The second person was his brother whom he brought with him. And the third person to the altar was me so that I could pray for him.

That’s why we do this. That’s why we’re here. God has saved you. God has transformed you. God healed you. God has called you. God has commissioned you and you’re in the right place. Your call is to, “Go!” You’re called to do incredible things. “...Not by might nor by power, but by My Spirit, says the LORD Almighty” (Zechariah 4:6). He’s called each one of us to transform lives for eternity. See, God wants to use us to do incredible things, but can I suggest something to you? The platform for that purpose, the foundation for it, is not on a lighted stage. It actually starts at the foundation of our character. The foundation is what’s in our heart. And so, the question is, “What is the condition of your heart?”

The Bible says, “Above all else, guard your heart, for everything you do flows from it” (Proverbs 4:23). Then in Deuteronomy 16, we get this snapshot of the Israelites. After 40 years of wandering in the desert, the idea of the promised land was the topic on their mind. “When will we ever get there? Why aren’t we getting there? Why is it taking so long? How will we do it?” They had a dream—it was the goal, the purpose of the exodus. It was why they ate bread without taste. It was the purpose of the whole journey. Why they left Egypt. But it was taking forever—forty years. It wasn’t a forty-year journey. It should have taken a short time if they had done it right. The problem wasn’t because they didn’t have a GPS. It took forty years because they had to get their heart in the right place.

They saw success as getting to the land. It says in Deuteronomy 16:20, “Follow justice and justice alone, so that you may live and possess the land the LORD your God is giving you.” That strategy doesn’t make sense as a work tactic—to acquire land you need to live right. In order to reach the promise and the dream,

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

it's not about the doing but rather where your heart is positioned—its posture, it's character.

What does success look like for you as an evangelist? We all have a picture of success, whether we want to admit it or not. We have a picture of what success looks like in ministry—specifically as an evangelist. How do you define success in your personal life? Is it to have a car? Is it to have a hot wife or husband and 2.5 kids? Maybe a Range Rover, a dog, and a big house? Or, become friends with celebrities and millionaires? In ministry, is it to have stadiums and crusades? Maybe to start with a small church; then move up to a bigger church; and one day pastor of megachurch? Or write twelve books and hold large conferences and post pictures on Instagram of all the people you know? What does success look like in terms of followers? Does that mean 5,000 YouTube subscribers or 100,000 followers on Instagram? Does that make you successful?

I think we need to signify what success looks like because otherwise comparison can take over. You can reach a pinnacle but feel it's never enough. In running they call this "chasing the mist." Athletes say this, "If I get a gold medal, then I'll retire." Then once they get the gold medal, they have to defend the title. It's never enough. In the end, we're building His Kingdom. We're building Him. What's the condition of your heart? What's your priority in being an evangelist? Here's what I have found. Somewhere along the way as evangelists doing ministry, we can actually lose Jesus. God wants you to be successful, but we need a proper view of that success. Do we want glory for us, or Him? In the end, are we building His Kingdom or building our ministry? Are we loving our families well, and loving Jesus well? Mother Teresa said, "God has not called me to be successful. He's called me to be faithful." That's why the character of an evangelist is critical.

This topic of finishing well is vital for an evangelist. I remember Reinhard Bonnke saying this: "Mind in the beginning, what matters in the end." Sadly, I've sat in rooms with ministers who looked like they had everything. As they began to share, I realized they had lost it all. They lost their marriages. They lost their kids. They lost their ministry. Some sat alone in their empty houses and wondered what it had all been about. They had chased something and ended up

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

with nothing. They lost their integrity and damaged the lives of the thousands of people that they worked to reach. Anyone can start well. But here's the question, "Can you finish well?"

If we study history books on evangelism, revivals, and ministers, we see that often, revival's fell apart—ministers fell apart usually from moral failures. Why? It always seemed to be about girls or guys, glory or gold. They became obsessed with fame, success, or pride. They had integrity issues around finances and how they managed money. So, how do we as evangelists have good character so that we actually end our race well?

1.) The first thing you need to know is whose we are and who we are called to be. We must know our value. The definition of value is the price something is paid for by its owner. The price for a piece of art is determined by the one who does the purchasing. The Bible says you and I belong to God. He exchanged His only Son for you and me. The cross proves our value. Jesus didn't die for nothing. You are incredibly valuable. Nobody has ever paid a greater price for you and for me than God. The cross reveals our value. Father paid the highest price possible, and it changes everything.

In June 2016, I was in a small community called Cape Dorset, Nunavut. Located on the northern Arctic part of Canada, I've been in this community a few times ministering to teens who are attempting suicide. This was my third time into this community. After I preached one night, I was getting ready to go to bed. All of a sudden, I felt intense discouragement come over me. Questions were coming to mind, "Why am I here? Why did I leave engineering? Why am I doing what I'm doing? It doesn't really matter. I have no value." Immediately, I recognized this wasn't the voice of God. This was the enemy. I started to quote Scripture, plant myself in the Word, and battle in prayer. It left, and I went to sleep. That morning, I woke up at 5:00 AM. "Why am I awake? Do I have to pee? No, I don't have to pee." All of a sudden, I clearly felt God's voice. He said, "Travis, this is what the people of this community feel like every day. They have lost their value. Tonight, in the service, preach about value."

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

About eighty people showed up that night in the servicemen, women, and children. In this community, there is a great amount of trauma from abuse, sexual abuse. Priests, teachers, and pastors, in the past, had come through this community and abused many. The people actually burned down the school because it reminded them of their pain. A \$14 million school burned to the ground because of the pain in this community. As I began to preach on value, how God saw their value, and how he paid an incredible price for them, grown men began to weep. Women begin to cry. The people in the community responded to the gospel. Deliverance took place and people were set free. Young kids were responding to the gospel and God began to transform lives. We have to know our value. I left that meeting thinking, “I need to know my value.” Yes, the people we ministered need to know. But first and foremost, as evangelists, do we know our value? Because when we do, our identity is really secure, we’re secure.

John 15:16 says, “You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you so that you might go and bear fruit.” My confidence is not in my ability, but in His ability to choose. He didn’t choose me to fail. He didn’t choose you to fail; and we can rest in that. He opens the doors and though we feel inadequate and weak and overwhelmed, He wants us to use our voices. He wants our lives to bear much fruit. I have nothing to prove. I just need to be a good son. You have nothing to prove, you just need to be a good son or daughter. And He’s a good Father! That’s so refreshing, I can’t tell you how refreshing it is when we know our value, it actually changes everything.

Knowing your value and being secure in your identity is key. I can’t save anyone. I can’t heal anyone. I can’t set anyone free. You can’t either. Only He can. Our job is to point to the One who can. This doesn’t just happen on the stage or the platform, but in our lives off the platform—our private life. In Acts, Peter preached, and three thousand people asked what they needed to do in order to be saved. What did Peter do? He just pointed to the Scripture—He just pointed to Him. It wasn’t in his ability to preach. It was God who saved the people.

When we understand that being a good evangelist isn’t about our ability, but His—it takes the pressure off. We rest in that, and it changes everything. It may

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

be our job to start a conversation that God will finish another time. We never know the role that we play in someone's journey to faith. Maybe sometimes we'll be the one that sees someone cross the finish line, but it was another evangelist who actually started the conversation. Someone else watered the conversation and you were there for the finale. But listen, we all simply do our part. But knowing our value actually takes the pressure off of us. The people we are reaching are His sons and daughters.

Sometimes, in our relationship with our earthly parents, cracks in our heart take place. It's important as evangelists, as ministers of the gospel, that we take care of these cracks in our heart now. I encourage people to see a counsellor, or a psychologist. We take our cars in maybe once or twice a year for a tune up or an oil change. When was the last time you took your mind and your heart in and got someone to ask you some hard questions? Difficult questions that confronted some of the hard places in your heart and you received healing? When was the last time the Holy Spirit healed some areas in your inner man? Here's the thing, if you have cracks you can't love your neighbor well. If you don't love yourself, you won't love others. We have to love ourselves really well. And, we have to know what God made us to be and love that too so we can be good evangelists. It's key that we deal with those cracks and those crevices.

For me, it was transformational. I grew up in a great home with two great Christian parents. But I still had stuff to work through and continue to work through every year. I continue to grow and to find security in my heart more today than yesterday. If we have arrested identity, or a wounded heart, it impacts our ministries as evangelists. If you have a father wound, or a wounded heart, you can come across with an edge. It may seem like it's actually beneficial, but can I tell you, it will impact your effectiveness because the Jesus you see will be the Jesus you preach.

I'm reminded of the Scripture where Jesus came to a blind man. Jesus touched him once and the man says, "I can see! I can see! Men look like trees." (Mark 8:24). He saw Jesus like a tree, but he couldn't see Jesus fully. It's not wrong to see Jesus as a tree, He is the tree of life. But He's more than that. The reality is if

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

our hearts aren't healed, if our hearts aren't whole, then we don't see Jesus clearly. And, it's essential that we see Jesus clearly in order to lead others to him.

We don't have to scare people into the Kingdom. We don't have to manipulate them because we're living from a place of pain or performance, rather than rest. That's why it's essential we know our value. Knowing our value will help us see the value in others as we minister. We won't see them as objects, numbers, or statistics for our websites and social media platforms. We'll see them as true sons and daughters of a God who loves them. I think that's the heart of evangelists, to see the relationship that's possible with Jesus, to open up every person to this new reality that Jesus loves them. To call out the gold in others. Some don't know that there's gold in anyone. Many just see dirt and grime. We get to tap on the cages that hold people captive and say, "Listen! There's gold in you. There's hope in you. That's our call, but we have to do it from a place of value, knowing our value and then, being able to see the gold, the value in those that were reaching.

2.) The second distinctive of good character in an evangelist is humility. Humility is the first virtue Jesus shares in Matthew 5—being poor in spirit. It underlies all the others. The Kingdom comes to those who are humble. What is humility? Humility is having a sense of perspective about oneself and one's real value. Not a perceived fantasy, or marketing/promotional based value. It's the narrative in your head that is formed by your value in Him. What do you tell yourself about yourself? Humility is interesting. If I say I'm humble, then I'm not. That's fake humility. I think sometimes we think being humble is putting on the suit and the role and the mask of being humble. Actually, humility is quite the opposite. It's taking off the mask. It's not a facial expression or a rich person wearing poor clothes. It's an inner awareness of your own frailty. Humility is to have the right perspective of yourself in the view of God.

Colossians 3:12 says, "Therefore, as God's chosen people, holy and dearly loved, clothe yourselves with compassion, kindness, humility, gentleness, and patience." The Greek word for humility is *tapeinophrosynen*. This compound word *tapeinos* means low to the ground. *Phren* is the gut, the diaphragm. In ancient Greece, the mind was actually thought to be located there. We learn humility



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

from Jesus, not just from His teaching, but His life. Philippians 2:5-8 says, “In your relationships with one another, have the same mindset as Christ Jesus. Who being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be used to His own advantage; rather He made Himself nothing by taking on the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness, and being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to death, even death on a cross.” This passage talks about this concept of kenosis; the emptying of oneself. Christ emptied Himself, of His rights, of His privileges as God and took on human flesh to rescue us from sin and death, Satan and hell. Christ was so compelled from love, by love that He left His position in glory to identify with us. Jesus left the comfort of heaven for a dirty messy stable. That’s the reality of the gospel. He left the applause of heaven for a carpentry shop. He left the adoration of angels for the insults of crowds. He took on the nature of a servant and humbled Himself out of love for all of us. That’s why Paul says, “Do nothing out of selfish ambition or vain conceit. Rather in humility, value others above yourself, not looking to your own interest but each of you to the interests of the others.” (Philippians 2:3-4).

Emanuel. Jesus was God in skins. God with us. You know, we shouldn’t focus on us. Much of the time we still focus on my sin, my struggle, my ministry, my evangelistic calling. But our faith, our relationship with God, is flawed if it’s only inward focused. It’s Jesus that should be the focus. There’s a river of water that’s flowing out of us. We are made to change the world. We are here for a bigger purpose than our needs, our selfish desires, and our hopes—a humble heart recognizes this. And an evangelist has to have a humble heart.

“Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.” (Matthew 5:3). Instead of being self-centered, we operate from the Kingdom as we become servants of all. Being a servant means I don’t look to do something only to get a return from it. I do something to serve because I see the value and the image of God in a person and I call it forth. That’s empowerment. That’s releasing. That’s not controlling but calling forth the value of the gold. Walking in humility is kind of like walking down a road. There are two ditches on each side of this road. One ditch is where I think of myself as bigger than I am. My story becomes

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

inflated. It's marketed. I have this unhealthy view of myself. Maybe I become entitled. Ultimately, I'm the main character in my story and God is the support role.

Between 1948 and 1954, 10,000 adolescents were surveyed. 12 percent considered themselves very important. In 1989, this same survey found that 77-to-80 percent thought of themselves as very important. This is the rise of narcissism. It's named after a Greek mythological figure who saw his reflection in the water. He couldn't leave his reflection and he eventually died of starvation. The scale of narcissism is off the charts today. Instagram propels this—likes, followers, all these things. Pride makes us reflect on our own image all the time in our heads. Paul said this, “But mark this: There will be terrible times in the last days. people will be lovers of themselves...” (2 Timothy 3:2).

In a different study initially given in 1976, people were asked their life goals. Fame was ranked 15th out of 60 possibilities. In 2007, 51 percent said fame is one of their top life goals. The root of this is pride. Pride is not thinking too much of myself. Pride is thinking of myself far too much. It causes self-promotion. I need to market myself. I need to build my ministry. I need to build my brand. I need to build my followers. I need to connect with the right people. I need to strive. I need to try. I need to work at it, perform, look really good, look the part. I need to try to climb the ladder, keep up with the Joneses (whoever the Joneses are). I need to do all of this and then if someone who is a great evangelist likes my post or takes a picture, I'll post it. I'll really arrive. If my value is determined by all of that, and not Him, it's driven by pride.

In Genesis, Adam and Eve are deceived by the serpent. The lie the serpent fed them was that, if they eat the fruit, they would be like God. He is withholding something from you. Can you really trust God? Will you move in your purpose, or your desires given by God if you don't do it for yourself? Can you really trust God to make it happen for you? Self-promotion is driven because you believe that no one will take care of you but you. It focuses on your strength, performing, and on doing. On trying to make it happen. It then introduces shame. You want to hide things instead of being humble and vulnerable. This sinful pride makes

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

us ashamed of our weaknesses, our failures. We go to any length to cover them up. Can I suggest to you that the popularity gospel is our biggest struggle today? How many followers do we have? Followers aren't bad; they're not a bad thing. But do you bow down to the One and follow the One wholeheartedly, above everyone else? We need to follow Him wholeheartedly. We need to focus on who we are following and not who is following us.

Back on that road of humility there is another ditch on the other side. In this ditch, we put ourselves down. We live small and call it humility. We undervalue ourselves. We say bad things about ourselves instead of realizing we are created in the image of God. We silence our voice. We can live in fear and are afraid of being ambitious. We live in feelings of inadequacy—a “poor is me” defeated attitude. My sermon is terrible. I'm a terrible evangelist, all these kinds of things. We don't live as big as God wants us to live. We call this humility, but it's not. It's equally rooted in pride. Just as much so as the self-promoter.

In Genesis, Chapter 1, we see that God created mankind in His likeness so mankind could rule and reign over every creature. He said be fruitful and increase. God trusted man. He entrusted mankind to reign and to create the future. The lie of self-promoting is, “Can I really trust God.” The lie in living small is “Does God really trust me?” Doesn't He know my weaknesses? We tend to live in the fear of what people think and not the fear of God—not the understanding of the authority and confidence forged in the reality that God trusts us. Both of those are centered in pride. They're about us.

We have to walk down the center of the road to have humility. I have fallen into both ditches at times, but God will help you walk down the center of the road. It's connected to trust. Being on the road conditions me to trust Him, to put Him first. Humility leads to hope that God has my future. God sees the injustices I'm facing. God has my ministry. I don't have to be my own defender. I am the supporting character of His story. It is His call for me to be an evangelist. It's His ministry. I'm made in His image. I don't understand it all, but I'm secure. I'm rested. I'm not trying. I don't have to strive to make it happen. It's so refreshing. Every time they see you, they should see God. Every time people under your

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

ministry see you, they should see God. A humble person is the most attractive person in the room. People want to be with a humble person. People want to hear a humble person speak. Humility is really strong. When I'm vulnerable, when I feel exposed, there's something so freeing about it. I'm not hiding anything. I have nothing to worry that something will come out. I have found if you lead from your weaknesses and brokenness, you feel safe. However, if you lead from a perception of perfection, you tend to be really fragile.

Humility is realizing God trusts me and I can trust a good God. It isn't about us. It's about Him. It's not about my life. It's about His. It's not about my dream. It's not my calling. It's about His. It's not my ministry; it's His. I lead a ministry called "Resurgence," which I've learned I need to hold with a really loose grip. I need to not clamp down too tight because it's not mine. It's His. I'm just a steward of what He called me to do for this season.

As evangelists, our character must display Jesus who was the servant of all. If you don't know God's place for you as an evangelist in the season, let me encourage you. Find someone else that has a dream in their heart. Find someone else that has a passion to reach people and go and serve them. Be willing to lay down your desire for ministry and serve them for this season. I assure you; God will speak to you about your calling. You will find your lane.

I remember when God called me away from the oil company. I was 23-years-old and I entered into fulltime ministry. I went from managing a whole division of people, hiring people, firing people, a company truck, benefits, and everything. I then went to work for a ministry doing youth conferences. My initial job in ministry was to serve. The first role I had was licking stamps on envelopes, then I set up chairs—I spent eight years serving that ministry, serving someone else's vision. But I can I tell you; it was the best eight years because God taught me things. Through the process of character refinement, I was able to sustain the ministry when He placed me on the platform. I was ready for what He wanted to do in this season.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

So, I encourage you—don't neglect the process. Don't neglect the situation you're in because God is teaching you, preparing you, and building the character needed to sustain what He wants to do in the future. God wants to do amazing things with you, but He won't drive a five-ton truck over a one-ton bridge. What I mean by that is He wants to build character in your life to sustain the amazing dream and purpose he has marked out for you. But He needs to build the bridge—He needs to build your life so that you can sustain the blessing when it comes.

3.) Integrity and purity are key to our character. They are essential. What do you do when no one is looking? It matters. Who may ascend the mountain of the LORD? Who may stand in his holy place? The one who has clean hands and a pure heart, who does not trust in an idol or swear by a false god. (Psalm 24:3-4). What is our thought life like? What do you do when no one's watching you? What boundaries have you placed in your life so that we will keep our lives pure? Who are you accountable to for your actions? This is critical. Who is pastoring in you? Who is holding you to the fire? Who is keeping you on that road so you're not leaning toward one side of that ditch? Who is asking you tough questions? Every evangelist needs accountability. Every evangelist needs a covering. If you don't have one, get one. It's an essential.

Influence begins with holiness and it's the Holy Spirit who makes you holy. If you want to influence culture, you must be set apart. You must be pure—holy, which will play out in your diligence with the way you manage finances and your diligence with how you administer your ministry. Don't blame the devil for mismanagement—use wisdom. Get the right people in the right areas, take care of things, establish an intentional system of accountability. I'm accountable to my board of directors. I am connected to another ministry. Where are you accountable? Do you have people in your life who say “no” to you? Who will tell you that something is not a good idea? We can all find people who cheer us on, but we need people who, with the right heart, can say “no” to us.

As I entered ministry, I had one evangelist tell me that he used to look for big donors. Then because they didn't give, he would look for smaller donors. They would give a little, so he felt as though he needed to find more. “Then,” he said,

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

“they stopped giving.” The lesson God taught him was not to look for God’s hand, but to look at Him. I assure you; God knows how to provide.

If you see yourself on a stage, before you get there, you need to care about what happens behind the scenes first. Put your time into planning, administrating, caring for the people who are making it all happen. It’s not just about the stage—it’s about what’s happening behind the stage. Whatever God has called you do in evangelism, care about the whole process, not just what you see as ministry. Put as much energy into organizing as you do the ministry aspect. Honor those who serve you well, honor those who invest in you, be a blessing to every church or every pastor who partners with you. When you finish your ministry, they should be better off than when you came. They should be left with more; their tanks should be full, not empty. There shouldn’t be a mess after you. They should love the church more. They shouldn’t be disillusioned or want to leave the church.

Your word should mean something. “Let your ‘Yes’ be ‘yes’ and your ‘No’ be ‘no’” (Matthew 5:37). “Don’t despise the day of small beginnings” (Zechariah 4:10). Don’t cancel the small thing for the big opportunity that comes—in our culture, we tend to want to wait for the best opportunity. Listen to the voice of God and do the thing that God calls you to do. *Not the things that seem best, but the thing that God has called you to do.*

When I began ministry full time, I had zero bookings on my calendar. I told God, “I know You’ve called me, so, You are going to have to provide the finances, You have to provide the opportunities—I have none. I remember praying one day and a call came in from a guy that I had talked to only once, two years earlier. God had put me on his heart and he said, “I live in a small northern community in northern British Columbia, here in Canada. I’d like you to come speak at a youth retreat. Our youth need to hear Jesus... Will you come? I don’t have much money. It’s a fourteen-hour drive. I know it’s a long way. Will you come?” As I prayed, I heard God say that I needed to go. It wasn’t about the money. This was my first invitation as a fulltime minister and my perspective toward it would set the tone for every subsequent invitation. As I grappled with the decision and God’s direction, I couldn’t help but contemplate 2 Chronicles 16:9, a passage

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

which is very telling about the way the Lord regards His people, “For the eyes of the Lord range throughout the earth to strengthen those whose hearts are fully committed to him...”

Three weeks later, I was at a conference with some pretty amazing evangelists. One, who is a general in the faith, asked, “Travis, would you come to an event we’re doing in the states? We’re doing this incredible event.” I was amazed and honored. Then he told me the date. It was the same day as the other invitation. I remember going to my hotel room and asking God what to do. “Do I cancel?” The Lord put Zechariah 4:10 before me, “Don’t despise the day of small beginnings, I called you to go there.” I told the evangelist how honored I was that he would ask me but my “Yes” needed to be “yes.” I said “No” to the big because I said “Yes” to the small. I don’t regret that decision. I don’t regret that email because I know that God called me to go to that small town. I didn’t get to go to the big event, but God moved in that small town. It opened up opportunities. There has been incredible fruit from that ministry and now I go on a regular basis. God will test us. He wants to know the condition of our hearts. If we’re really in it for Him. If we are really listening to Him (again, 2 Chronicles 16:9). That was a test that I had to go through.

4.) Don’t do ministry alone, build a team. Celebrate your wins together and when you have tough losses, you handle it together. That got ingrained in me long ago. It’s important to empower others to go further than you could ever go. John Maxwell says if you’re leading others and you’re lonely, then you’re not doing it right. If you’re all alone, nobody is following you. You really aren’t leading. We are better together. That means I have to be okay with letting others have opportunities and cheering them on. I should support them, champion them, and bring out the gold in them. It’s their time to shine, it’s their time to do what God’s called them to do. That’s the greatest joy for me. How do we raise up more and cultivate the next crop of God’s leaders? It’s not about us, it’s about the legacy that comes after us.

Integrity is also being true to what God has called you to do. Stay in your lane. Comparison tries to kill our joy. He hasn’t called you to do what someone on

## THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST

Instagram is doing. He's called you so do what He's called you to do. Do that well. It's attractive. It's the thing that will come alive in you. Sometimes we look at others and try to imitate them. It doesn't work. Be who God called you to be and it will be amazing.

5.) The last key is intimacy and prayer. A strange thing can happen when we do the work of the ministry. We can lose the value in spending time with Him as we get so busy doing the work of God that we compromise the depth of our relationship with the God of the work and lose Jesus in it all. We can spend time evangelizing, but neglect spending time in the Word. How much time do we spend in prayer? How much time do we spend listening for His voice? I thought that when I went fulltime, I would have so much time to read the Word, time to pray, time to hear His voice, time for the presence of God... Can I tell you? It seems even harder. You have to determine to make time for His presence.

I'm reminded of Samuel. He knew how to bake the bread in the Tabernacle. He knew how to turn on the lights, I mean the candle. He knew how to operate the church. He knew how to serve, open the doors, and greet people. He did all the things he was supposed to do in the Tabernacle for Eli. He knew how to serve Eli well. But here's the reality. He didn't know the voice of God. The One that the whole thing was all about, he didn't know His voice. It's easy to neglect our intimacy with God. It's easy to neglect prayer. Samuel heard the voice of God eventually. He responded, "Speak Lord, your servant is listening." (1 Samuel 3:10). It's here that the Bible says the Lord came and stood there. Can I add that Samuel probably said "I just peed my pants. Like God stood there." Can you imagine God standing there? Here's the reality. If we want to be effective in evangelism, we need an encounter with the Holy Spirit. We need God to stand. We need to get hungry for more of Him. I can't reach people. This is all about Him; and if I don't have Him then I missed everything.

That's the key to evangelism. I need to know Him. I need to know all about Him, not just talk about Him. We need the power of God in our lives. We need to function as an overflow of His presence, lean into Him. Samuel then had a word for the whole nation. Here's the guy who couldn't hear the voice of God,



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

didn't discern the voice of God and then I had a word for the entire nation of Israel. That's transformation. Why did that happen? Because he began to learn the voice of his Father.

Our power is derived from our intimacy with God which is why prayer has to be our foundation. Leading our own lives well is key before we can lead our ministries well, before we can minister to others. John 15:1-4 says this, "I am the true vine, and My Father is the Gardener. He cuts off every branch in Me that bears no fruit, while every branch that does bear fruit, he prunes so it will be even more fruitful. You are already clean because of the word I have spoken to you. Remain in me, as I also remain in you. No branch can bear fruit by itself; it must remain in the vine. Neither can you bear fruit unless you remain in Me." When you abide, it actually refines your character. When we are found in the place of prayer, character is built, confession happens, deliverance happens, and our hearts are healed. Our purpose is forged in the place of intimacy. Character is formed when you know your value, you serve humbly with integrity and purity; and you have intimacy and prayer. The fruit of this is character. God will speak and direct you through your prayer life. If you don't know the Word, how can you bring people to Jesus because He is the Word. We have to know that. We have to know the Word. See, I believe that revival comes when people love the Word. We need to be evangelists who love the Word. You have to know the Bible inside and out. It is key so you can speak the Word in every situation.

In conclusion, the character of the evangelist is critical. We often look at the outside of things. But can I tell you? God looks at the foundation. God doesn't just look at the shingles, roof, and gutters, He looks at the wiring and the plumbing. That's where He starts. He wants to build something incredible with your life, with your ministry. But it actually starts with the foundation. I look at the big high-rise towers that go to sixty-five stories high. Do you know where they start? They're built underground. For them to be able to sustain the incredible structure above it, it starts at the foundation. The cement goes down so that it can sustain the weight of what is above and rests on it.

## **THE CHARACTER OF AN EVANGELIST**

Here's the thing: God wants to go down deep with you. He wants to grow roots so that you're not ripped out easily, so you can sustain the incredible harvest that is going to happen through your life. You have to be able to sustain the incredible move of God that's going to happen as your footings are established. Each of you are powerfully anointed. But just because you're anointed, doesn't mean that you're living right. It's essential that as evangelists, we know our value. That we live humbly, that we walk and operate in purity and integrity. And we're also rooted powerfully through prayer and an intimate relationship with Him.

It's not an accident that you're reading this. I believe that the Holy Spirit has been speaking to you, teaching you, and I believe He's in the room where you are right now. I believe some of you are going to set the course of your character that will guide you for the rest of your lives. But there's likely others who, as you have read this, have felt the Holy Spirit prompt you in areas of your life where you need a course correction. There are some things where you need to change. You need to get accountable to people. You have to be open and vulnerable and go to that hard spot today. It's not too late. Today is the day to set the course of your character because if you do not, you will end in disaster.



# THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

Jeri Hill

## SYNOPSIS

In this chapter, Evangelist Jeri Hill demonstrates to us the importance of intercession when it comes to evangelism. We cannot spend time with Jesus, and not come away with a love for people.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Jeri Hill is the wife of the late evangelist Steve Hill and the president of “Steve Hill Ministries.” Jeri travels nationally and internationally bringing the message of revival, repentance, and healing to a lost and dying world.

For more info, visit: <https://stevehill.org/jeri-hill-bio.html>



## THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

I love sharing Jesus with people! My late husband, Steve Hill, and I founded “Harvest Ministries” in 1992. Steve loved Jesus with all of his heart, soul, and strength. It was such an honor and a privilege to serve the Lord alongside him.

In this chapter, I want to share with you what I believe to be a vital key in seeing results in your evangelistic ministry—the importance of spending time with Jesus. When you spend time with Jesus, you get a burden for the lost. You stir-up a passion for Him and a burden for people. The first book my husband wrote is entitled “Time to Weep.” The premise is that it is time to weep for the lost and truly be concerned for the world.

To this day I still get overwhelmed with compassion for people who are burdened down in their lives and alienated from God. Why? Because I myself was burdened down and separated from God. It’s important to remember that every single person comes from a different walk of life.

My mom was 17-years-old when she was raped, which is how I was conceived—I was the product of that rape. But God took something as traumatic and ugly as the crime of rape and fashioned a beautiful plan for my life... However, I did not discover Him until I was 18-years-old. In those first eighteen years, I found myself up-close-and-personal with difficulty and pain. My mom married to give me a dad and had two sons in that marriage. Sadly, they were divorced when I was four. She then had a four-year-old, a two-year-old, and a newborn. We lived on food stamps and welfare. God was a distant second to a hot bath with lavender Epsom salt for my mom as she fought a losing battle with severe depression. Consequently, she slept most of the day because she didn’t know how to face the difficulties of her life.

My mom remarried, again, when I was ten-years-old this time, to an alcoholic who was verbally as well as physically abusive. By the time I was twelve, I was smoking and drinking and at fifteen, I had graduated to smoking pot. Then at sixteen, I began selling and doing harder drugs. This “wholesome” lifestyle culminated with me sitting in a jail cell at eighteen. However, God had a plan.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

The truth is, when I was sixteen, a pastor began visiting my house every Saturday and he continued for two years. When I was home, he would tell me that Jesus loved me and had a plan for my life. And if I wasn't there, he'd write it on a piece of paper and leave me Teen Challenge tracks. He was certainly out to win me for Jesus. I also found out it wasn't just me. He was doing this same thing throughout the city. He would go to every house and knock on every door. If the families were involved in a local church, he wouldn't mess with them. But he felt like every person needed to hear about Jesus. So here I am at eighteen, running from God.

One day I'm out in the country at a mobile home. I hear a knock on the door and there's that pastor. I about fainted when I answered the door. He about fainted when he saw me. He told me he had been on his knees praying and weeping for me.

During this time, my mom had given her life to the Lord and had been praying and weeping for me. I'm sure this pastor was an answer to her prayer. He was relentless as he prayed, "God, I'm not giving up on this girl. Where is she?" That was the turn of events for me. He has spent two years witnessing to me in my home and now he came and found me.

Did I get saved right then? No. But when that pastor left, I knew I needed to call him and tell him that I was ready to go into Teen Challenge. I was ready to get right with God. It was like he was salting my oats. You can lead a horse to water, but you can't make it drink. However, God was working behind the scenes, and I gave in to Him. I didn't want God to give up on me. I gave my life to Jesus Christ when I was 18-years-old, entered Teen Challenge and got my life straightened out. My mom had wept for me. This pastor had wept for me. My husband's mother had also wept for him as a young person. He had been arrested thirteen times and faced twenty-five years in the penitentiary. That's where God wants to take us! He wants to cultivate deep compassion in our hearts so that we are deeply concerned about the state of humanity. So much so that we weep for the lost.

## THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

Steve and I had a favorite Scripture. “Those who go out weeping, carrying seed to sow, will return with songs of joy, carrying sheaves with them (Psalm 126:6). I met my husband in Bible school and God put us together. For thirty-five years we wept for the lost. We cried out to God and yielded our lives totally to Him. We wanted to be used for God’s honor and for His glory.

God wanted the same thing. He wanted to transform us, change us, and make us into His image so that we could be His hands and feet. In John 11, we read about Mary and Martha. They also had a brother named Lazarus who was about to die. Jesus is told how serious Lazarus’s condition is, but he doesn’t show up right away. When Jesus finally did go to his friends, Lazarus was dead. Mary and Martha are grieving their loss and are weeping. Jesus felt their pain deeply. “When Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews who had come along with her also weeping, he was deeply moved in spirit and troubled” (John 11:33).

Jesus feels our pain. He feels what we are going through. Mary and Martha felt like there was no hope for this person who was dead and in the grave. They never dreamed that Jesus could bring him out of the grave. Their brother was gone, and we read in John 11:35 “Jesus wept.”

I looked at that verse and thought, “If Jesus wept and then called Lazarus out of the grave, how many people do we know that are so dead in their sin, they stink to be around. Lazarus’s body had to stink because of his death. People dead in their sin have attitudes that stink. They are not pleasant to be around. Why? Because they’re away from God. They are dead in their sin. So, I thought, “If Jesus can weep for somebody, call them out of the grave, and raise them from the dead, I want to be like you, Jesus! I want to be able to weep and call forth those who are dead in their sin to new life. I want to be like Jesus. He wept and we should weep.”

We are not alone in this battle. We do not have to raise people from the dead. That’s Jesus’s responsibility. We’re just a vessel to show them that there’s hope and to throw them a lifeline. God wants to pull them up out of their dead spiritual



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

state and come to know Him as Savior and Lord. And He wants to use each and every one of us to do that.

In my 35 years of ministering with Steve, and then what God has done through me since, I've never felt called to a specific country. I feel like we were called to all people everywhere.

The Father wants to rescue this world. "For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life" (John 3:16). Although it's not pleasant sometimes, if we really love God, then we will also love people. Sometimes, their situations are horrible, but the joy rescuing somebody brings is more than worth it. It might be hard work, but we will experience the rejoicing as well when we see a life that's been changed.

We play a part in their salvation because we wept for them, we shared with them, and maybe even helped them come out of the lifestyle that had them trapped. I've seen many who were demon possessed find deliverance. I've prayed over them and believed for their complete healing. The enemy wants to keep people bound, but God wants to set them free.

I can tell you that there were many times I didn't know how to minister to a specific person. I didn't know how to bring them out of their situation. But I had a burden for them and fasted, prayed, and wept for them and God brought deliverance.

I know a woman in Argentina who was a revolutionist. She was very hardcore. She didn't believe in God or the Holy Spirit. She didn't believe that God could change her life. Nor did she believe that we were there to help the people in Argentina to grow—to see their lives changed and transformed.

And for six months, every single day, I went to her and told her that Jesus loved her and had a plan for her life. If that pastor did that for me, I could do it for her. So, for six months, I just loved her, sharing with her the love of Jesus and what He did on the cross for her in a loving way.

## THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

I fasted and I wept for her. I remember telling my husband, “She’s never going to get saved. She’s never going to change. We were evangelizing and people were coming to the church. Because she was located right around the corner, she heard the worship. She heard the message. But she didn’t want to receive Jesus.

Then one day I went to visit her, and she said, “You’re just here to get money from the Argentines. You’re just here to take from them.” She discredited everything that we were doing, but something rose up inside of me. All of a sudden, my passion for the truth rose up inside of me and I proclaimed, “I believe in Jesus Christ. I believe in what He did on the cross. I believe that he died for you and wants you to live for Him.”

I was yelling at her in Spanish—yelling at the storm that surrounded her. She began to back away and said, “Okay! I believe you now.” What was the turning point? The Argentine revolutionist in her needed to see that I believed what I was talking about. At that point she gave her heart to Jesus, and she wanted me to teach her the Word of God. Her life was completely transformed. She moved out of her boyfriend’s place and went to Bible school for four years. She became the first woman missionary from Argentina to go to Cameroon, Africa. She was the first to be allowed to live there as a single young woman. She’s still living for God today.

In 1999, Steve and I were in Japan for ministry. The Japanese pastors told my husband not to expect to do altar ministry like he was used to doing. They said the Japanese people don’t respond in the same way. Steve and I both listened, but then all of a sudden, God dropped it in my heart to go outside and evangelize. I asked the girl with me who spoke English and Japanese if she would go out with me. We passed out every tract we had, and I continued to feel an urgency to tell people about Jesus. As I was speaking in English, the other girl was translating my message into Japanese. Most people were not looking at us and not responding—it was discouraging.

After 45 minutes of passing out tracts, the spirit of intercession came on me outside the building. I buckled over and started to cry for the people of Japan.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I just kept saying over and over, “The people of Japan need Jesus. The people of Japan need Jesus. The people of Japan need Jesus.” I wept and wept and wept...

A couple who were on the setup team of this meeting walked up and asked, “Miss Jeri, are you okay?” I assured them that I was and wiped the tears from my face. Then I said, “No, I’m not okay. The people of Japan need Jesus. The people in Japan need Jesus.” He pointed to the girl standing next to him and said, “This is a pastor’s daughter. I’m trying to get her to stay in the meeting. She doesn’t believe in Jesus. She doesn’t want to be here. She thinks it’s all a show.

As I looked at her, I said, “Oh, the enemy is so happy that you want to leave. He is dancing around you. He does not want you to hear the message of salvation. He does not want you to yield to the passionate love of Jesus. He wants you to leave. If you have just a mustard seed of faith to maybe believe in Jesus Christ, I want you to go back in and listen to my husband preach.” The young lady grabbed the man’s arm to pull him away. I thought, “Nothing happened, nothing changed.” But my burden lifted, and I went back into the meeting. I felt like a rag doll that had been dipped in the tears of the Spirit of God for the souls of the people. I felt so drained.

However, as my husband preached the message, people responded. They ran to the altar. The pastors were in shock. After leading them in the sinner’s prayer, my husband called me up onto the platform to pray. I felt a tap on my shoulder. I turned around to see that young man standing behind me and pulling the girl up close to him. He told me that she came back in and listened to Steve preach. She gave her heart to Jesus.

I didn’t know who I was out there for, but it was for her. It’s important to be obedient and not listen to your flesh. Listen to the Spirit and move according to His leading and let God have His way through your life. As you weep for the lost, God will move upon their hearts, whether it’s someone on the street or at a crusade. Whatever you are like on the platform, make sure you’re like that with individuals you encounter as well. God cares about every single person.

## THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

God doesn't just move when there is a crowd. He is so in tune with every single life. He knows what they need. He knows what He wants to change in them. God wants to use us to throw out that life ring and pull them out of their dire need. No matter what it is, make sure you're available to the crowd as well as the individual. Be there for them.

God taught me some of the things through that experience in Japan. That prayer burden was so encompassing. But there are also times where we get distracted. We get wrapped up in our own lives or the things that we're going through. Maybe you have family members away from God. A divorce takes place, or someone passes away. I lost my husband seven years ago. I lost my son within the same year. Life gets difficult. People go through really tough things in life. Don't throw in the towel just because you go through something. Continue to give your life to Jesus. Lay it all on the altar for Him and let Him have His way.

When we go through hardships, Father wants to teach us lessons that strengthen our faith. One of those lessons I needed to learn was how not to be distracted when interceding for the lost. In 1992, Steve was asked to go to Spain. I couldn't leave with Steve because my one-year-old didn't have a passport. I applied for a passport for my child with the plan of joining Steve once it arrived. Then Shelby came down with chicken pox. I would now have to wait until I could get a doctor's note saying that she was no longer contagious.

I was no longer waiting two weeks for the passport; this now had been extended to at least four weeks before we could be released to go to Spain. During this time, instead of praying for Steve, I was distracted by the issues with getting a passport and then our daughter having chicken pox.

I then noticed mice nesting in the house where we were staying. For two days, I cleaned up after the mice. One night as I'm sitting on the floor reading my Bible and eating licorice, my little girl, starts screaming her head off. It was about eleven o'clock and she wanted to get out of the crib. She wanted to be in mommy's arms. She was not going to be consoled and she was clawing at me to keep from going back into the crib.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

I took her in my arms, and I turned up all the lights. Leaving my Bible and the licorice on the floor, I laid her down next to me to go to sleep. The next morning, the licorice bag had been attacked by the mice. I called the maintenance department, and they set four mousetraps. The next morning all four traps were full of mice. They set them up again and caught four more mice. When the number of caught mice turned from eight to twelve, I started to deep clean the duplex.

As I moved the furniture, I found licorice behind the sofa. I then found licorice behind a curio cabinet. I find mice droppings on the crib on the top of the crib and mice droppings on the bed that was in that room as well. All of a sudden, I realized that the mice had been crawling on my baby and probably chewing on her little chicken pox sores.

I was distracted and focused on the horror of that thought. That evening when my husband called, I was distraught. The only thing I could think of was that the mice had been crawling on my baby. Steve, however, was concerned that no one was getting saved in Spain. Nobody wanted to give their heart to Jesus. He had been there for five weeks and no one had given their life to the Lord. Honestly, he was not accustomed to people not getting saved. That's all he could talk about. For me, all I could talk about was what was going on at home.

We weren't on the same page. He wasn't concerned about the mice and I wasn't concerned about Spain. Our conversation got a little tense, but when we hung up, we had worked through it. I picked up the book I had been reading by Leonard Ravenhill and opened it up to where I had placed the bookmark the day before. The first sentence I read was "some of you are hunting mice while the lion devours the land."

I am telling you those words jumped off the page. I found myself on the floor weeping, asking God to forgive me for being so distracted and not praying for Spain and the people to come to Jesus. For the first half hour, I repented for being distracted. For the next two hours after that, I cried out for Spain. I bound the enemy—the lion that was devouring the land. I began to weep for each life that

## THE PRAYER LIFE OF THE EVANGELIST

was rejecting God. Through tears, I cried out that God would move and that He would deal with the lion in the land.

The next call from Steve was powerful. He said, “Jeri, all heaven came down in the service. Over one hundred people gave their hearts to Jesus.” I knew that I played a huge part in that by weeping for the lost—weeping for the people that were away from God in Spain. God moved and people got saved.

That taught me a huge lesson about intercession. Every nation is different. The people in every country are so distinct and Jesus died for every single one of them. We don’t know their needs. We don’t know what it’s going to take for them to come to the cross. But if we have spent time weeping for them, crying out to God for them that their hearts would be ready to receive the seed of the Word of God, we will see God move. We will see results.

Be available for the Holy Spirit. Be ready for those tears to flow. Have a genuine concern for the people to encounter Jesus, so much so that you are willing to weep for them. I can’t even drive by a house without thinking, “God, do they know you? Do they know that you died for them or are they desperate? Are they in a pit? Are they in the miry clay and they don’t know how to get out?” *Are we truly concerned for every single person in this world?*

Oh, God, raise up an army of weepers! Raise up an army who goes after you! Jesus, raise up an army who has a passion for God and a burden for people!

One time, Steve spoke with Leonard Ravenhill and told him, “This burden has gotten so heavy, I don’t know if I can bear it anymore. Len, will you pray it off of me?” Leonard Ravenhill responded, “Why would I pray it off of you when I prayed it onto you? I am praying God places the burden of weeping for the lost on you. I’m praying that it’ll be so heavy that you feel the weight of the world just as Jesus did. That is my prayer for you—that you will feel the weight of the lostness of this world. And that God will use all the things you go through in life to catapult you into reaching the lost for Him.”

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

I can say that God truly does use all of our life experiences to reach the lost. After I lost my son, I met a maid in a hotel. She had also lost her son and she was blaming God. I wrapped my arms around her, and when she heard I too had lost my son, she wept on my shoulders. She asked, “Why did God let this happen?” I prayed for her and God softened her heart. Because I had gone through the loss of my own son, I was able to comfort her the same way God had comforted me. God wants to use our pain as a tool for transformation in somebody else’s life.

There is a much bigger picture involved than what we see right in front of us — a much bigger picture. I pray for evangelists. I pray for pastors. I pray for every single disciple to rise up, to be the man and woman of God you were created to be. I pray that you are not distracted by your own circumstances, but that you see that God wants to use it all for His glory. Let’s see the big picture—Jesus died for the whole world. And if we deeply know Him, let’s carry the same burden for the lost that Jesus had on the cross. Let’s do everything possible to bring people out of their dead spiritual state to meet the King of kings and the Lord of lords. I pray that you will be a vessel fit for the master’s use through it all.

# ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?

Jason Frenn

## SYNOPSIS

This is a fascinating look at the difference between the evangelist and the revivalist. Evangelist Jason Frenn teaches us the importance of knowing how God gifted us and knowing our audience. But no matter the specific ministry bent, the love of God is what motivates ministry whether to the lost or the church.

## MEET THE EVANGELIST

Jason Frenn is an international conference speaker and author who has spoken to millions of people around the world. God has given him the honor of sharing in 80 international crusades. In each one of them, lives have been marked by the tens of thousands of people who find hope in Christ. In ten years of crusade ministry, we have had the privilege of speaking to four million people in live events with over 400,000 people making first time decisions for Christ.

For more info, visit: [www.frenn.org](http://www.frenn.org)





## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?

**T**here is a difference between an evangelist and revivalist. Most people who call themselves evangelists are, in fact, revivalists. In this chapter, let's discuss how to discern the difference between the two, the great gifts that both of them bring to the table, and the impact that they can have around the world.

Unfortunately, many people who think they have one of these gifts, try to do the other. They value the other but find themselves spinning their wheels and not having the same kind of results that they wish they had. So, we want you to align your gift, that is, what God has called you to do with the right audience, at the right time, and in the right place.

Personally, I come from a crazy family. I don't know about you, but there were nine divorces in my family between my mom, my dad, and my stepfather. There were over 12 marriages. My dad had been married four times. My mom had been married three times. My stepdad six times, and my mom was his sixth wife. She was thirty-two years younger than he was. Alcoholism plagued us, drugs, and everything else that comes with that lifestyle. I was the first generation to break the cycle. Wouldn't you know that God would call me to be an evangelist.

Sometime in July of 1982, in a place called Jesus West Coast at California State University in Northridge, California, I sat with about 500 people on a football field under the hot Southern California sun. David Wilkerson stood up to preach. Now I had come from an unchurched family, so I didn't know any of the popular preachers. The only two preachers that I had ever heard of were Billy Graham and the Pope. You can imagine the shock to my system when David Wilkerson began to speak. His voice was thundering off the San Fernando Valley mountains that surrounded that small stadium.

Five hundred people sat on the grass and listened to a message about renewing their lives and a call to holiness. That was followed up with a call to ministry as Wilkerson urged all the young people to come down and devote their lives to ministry. I don't know what anyone else on the field felt, but I felt a conviction. I went to the front. Not only did I go when brother Dave gave his altar call, when

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Mario Murillo gave an altar call, I went. When Keith Green gave an altar call, I went. As they sang, I went. You name it, I went. Dave Roevery was there, Jack Hayford was there, it was an amazing lineup of preachers.

Indeed, God called us to be missionaries, and we started an evangelistic endeavor that wound up in Central America. Our desire was to do open air campaigns in marginalized communities. We didn't have the funds to do it, but that's what God had called us to do. That's what I felt in my heart. Dave's message that night was not an evangelistic message. It was a revivalist's message. Dave was an evangelist, but he was also revivalist.

Fast forward to 1993. I'm in Costa Rica. I'm driving David Wilkerson's son Greg from venue to venue. Greg is part of this massive crusade effort that his dad and his uncle were putting on in Costa Rica for the 50th year anniversary of the Assemblies of God. Wouldn't you know that, as Greg and I were sitting down to lunch at the hotel, his dad came walking up.

Now I was afraid of David Wilkerson simply because I felt he was the most powerful preacher on the planet. He had been the first real preacher I'd ever heard, especially in a large setting. When he came up, I was rather intimidated. But I decided I was going to be rather gutsy, and I looked at Dave and I said, "Listen, I know you don't know me from Adam, but I just want to tell you, there was an event called Jesus West Coast. You gave an invitation for people to give their lives to a deeper call to ministry." He interrupted me and said, "Jesus West Coast, as I remember that wasn't really well publicized. That event really didn't come out that well." And, I said, "Well, Brother Dave that was the event that God called me to be a missionary. I am serving the Lord because of what God did that night" He looked down and said, "Well, I guess it wasn't that bad."

Many times, we don't understand the impact the words we speak have on people's lives. It is so important that we understand the difference between the evangelist, and the revivalist.

In the Old Testament, the prophet was responsible for speaking to both the world and to the people of God. The prophet spoke to "other people groups" in terms

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?**

of evangelism. Several examples of that might be Noah, Jonah, or Daniel. At the same time the prophet would speak to the “people of God.” He would render a message of correction and renewal, much like Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel.

As we come into the New Testament, something very interesting happens to the office of the prophet. It now splits into two different offices. We still have the office of the prophet, but now we also have the office of the evangelist. However, in the office of the evangelist, we will see that there is both the revivalist and the evangelist. Most of us call ourselves evangelists, but if we want to stay true to the definition of the word, the evangelist does something different than the revivalist.

In Acts 2, we see the revivalist in action; and in 1 Corinthians chapter 12. We see the evangelist in action in Mark, and Luke, as well as John. The prophet obviously is in action in Acts, Chapter 5, and 1 Corinthians 5.

But, to really illustrate the difference between the two, the evangelist is focusing on the lost. His and her concern is for the spiritual well-being of those who don’t know Jesus. The revivalist, on the other hand, focuses on reviving the church. In essence, the evangelist takes the message of salvation to people who need it. And the revivalist encourages people to experience greater connection with God.

If we look at our lives on a spiritual continuum, from beginning to the end, we can see that the evangelist is really commissioned to the task of harvesting. Whereas the revivalist falls somewhere between pastors and evangelists. The revivalist focuses on helping the church grow in her spiritual connection to God—experiencing the miracles, the movement, the Spirit, and all that God would have them experience. The pastors move people into discipleship.

If we continue along this continuum, we see that Bible school teachers and theologians are added for a deeper understanding. Many of our universities such as Oral Roberts University or Vanguard University, equip the people of God in this continuum. If we look at the evangelism continuum, we see that the evangelists continue to focus on the spiritual needs of those who are lost. They’re

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

involved in seeding all the way through into harvesting. The revivalists are also involved in harvesting, but they're also moving people towards discipleship.

"Touched by an Angel" was a program that came out on network television. It had no interest in harvesting. It wasn't about making disciples. It was simply planting the idea that God is there and that He loved people. Preachers like Robert Schuller or Paul Finkenbinder would fall into this category.

Joel Osteen will give an invitation for salvation. But if you look at the message that he preaches, it is very much about planting the seed. Carlos Annacondia is now moving into more of the harvesting as is Billy Graham, and some of the others like Reinhard Bonnke. As we continue to move to the right of the scale, we move into discipleship. David Wilkerson started Teen Challenge. We just moved right in the process from harvesting to discipleship. TD Jakes, and some of the others like Amy Semple McPherson and Benny Hinn are less focused on seeding. They're more focused on training people how to experience a deeper relationship with God.

All of this has brought me to this point, "What are you? What are you called to be? Who has God wired you to be?" The question, I think, is a very difficult one, because many times we think we have the answer. We think we know the answer, but our actions indicate something else. Like I said earlier, everyone calls themselves an evangelist, but very few of those evangelists are truly focused only on those who are spiritually lost. Many of us who call ourselves evangelists are, in fact, revivalists.

I'm not saying one is more important than the other. We all fall under the evangelistic umbrella, but it is absolutely crucial if you want to have an effective ministry that you have to be on point. Your main point has to be fully understood by that audience. If it's not, something is missing.

I often teach at the Ziglar Corporation. I teach keynote speakers. One of the things that we do at the Ziglar Corporation, is that after someone gives a keynote address, we ask everyone in the audience to write down the main point of the keynote speaker. Inevitably, we will have ten different opinions. Why is that?

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?

Because many times the message that we think we're communicating is not, in fact, the message that is being heard. Or even worse, we aren't truly speaking or connecting to the audience.

As we look at the evangelist, we see that they are more interested in secular media outlets, public evangelistic meetings, neutral venues, stadiums, arenas, parks, open air places, marginalized communities, and the unchurched audience. They don't care if people are raising their hands or shouting "Amen!" because their primary focus is that their lost audience understands that there's hope. The revivalist, on the other hand, is utilizing more of Christian media outlets, church promoted meetings, invitations, or pre-registrations. They utilize their services, or church buildings, maybe campgrounds—things that are more religiously centered. For the most part, most of the audience tends to be a Christian audience.

Now, here's the thing. If you want to discover what you're truly made of, then you need to ask yourself the following questions: What has God designed you to do? What do you do better than others? What would those people closest to you say is your strongest talent and greatest strength? In order to find your golden thread, you really need to tap into this question of: Would you feel more comfortable speaking to a stranger who doesn't know Christ? Or speaking to a stranger from church about the power of the Holy Spirit. Ultimately, the audience you feel most comfortable addressing reveals, whether you are evangelistic or revivalistic.

We have a dear friend of our family who is about 27-years-of-ages now. She is a gem. She's an ordained minister. She and her husband are fantastic individuals. They've disciplined my children as well. She came into my office, and said, "Jason, I want you to disciple me as an evangelist. I responded, "Allie, you know that we love you. But before we walk down that path, we want to discover who you truly are. Let me ask you a question. If God could give you anything, a blank check, what would you like to see in your ministry?" Without hesitation, she said, "I need to see the power of God move in our churches. I want to see people filled with the baptism of the Holy Spirit. I want to see miracles. I want to be a part of renewal." I told her, "Well Alli, I think you're more of a revivalist than you are an evangelist." She said, "What do you mean? I want to be an evangelist!" I said,

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

“An evangelist is someone who goes into uncharted territory, uncharted waters, and they look to establish the Kingdom of God where it is yet to be established. That’s what evangelists do. They are pioneers. Not to be confused with apostles, but they look for those open places to create a market where there is no market. corporations do the same thing. We call them corporate. What do they do? They take a product that no one knew they could live without and they develop that market. That’s what an evangelist does. We bring Jesus into places so people can experience Him for the first time. When they experience Jesus, they can’t imagine life without Him. That’s what an evangelist does.

But if you want renewal, that’s what a revivalist does. They’re both under the umbrella of the office of the evangelist. But they two have very distinct messages. Can you do both? Absolutely. Not a problem. You just have to be focused on the specific message pertaining to your audience. Don’t try to combine the two. Don’t try to overlap them too many times, because you will have a great message, that doesn’t produce the results you expect. Know your audience.

She sat there and took it all in. Then she devoted time to prayer and fasting and started sending us newsletters. Now, the move of God in her meetings is absolutely extraordinary. She doesn’t have 50,000 people coming into the presence of God and giving their lives to Christ for the very first time. But she has thousands of testimonies of people whose lives have been transformed—who have been healed and delivered—because God is doing great things.

We started out in Costa Rica back in 1991. After Brother Dave came through and I gave him my testimony, someone asked me in 1994, “If you could do whatever God would allow you to do, what would you do?” We didn’t have the budget to do it, but my desire was to do open air campaigns. I wanted to go into marginalized communities, set up a platform, put up a sound system, and some lighting. It didn’t have to be produced great, but let’s just have some music and preach the word to people who would never darken the doors of a local church. That was my desire, and that’s what we started to do.

## ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?

God provided a flatbed. We had a Bose sound system. We had a great musical group, and we would go from marginalized to marginalized community. I'm talking about 18-to-20,000 people in this community, living in tin houses and cardboard shacks, where prostitution and gang violence was the norm. I'm not talking about beautiful stadiums with air conditioned green rooms. All those things are great. We've all experienced them, but my golden thread, my place where I wanted to be was down in the dirt with people who had never considered their lives worthy enough to know God. Those who needed to understand that God loves them, and He could set them free.

We started doing these campaigns. We started with about 1500 people showing up, until pretty soon, we grew and grew and needed to get a tent. We would do one marginalized community after another. We then noticed something very interesting beginning to happen. Some people began to manifest a diabolical presence. We weren't really sure what to do. Out of about 5,000 people, two people would manifest. This wasn't like the exorcist. Well, in some cases, it was. But we didn't know what to do. We prayed and asked the Lord, "What should we do with these people?" The local pastors would grab the person, pull them to the back of the platform, and just start screaming in Spanish "Fuera, Fuera!" which means "Come out, Come out!"

We didn't know how to manage this, right? But we knew that God wanted us to address the issue. When you have witchcraft, drug violence, gang violence, and prostitution, plus an unbelievable amount of pain in a society—you have to be prepared spiritually to deal with those diabolical forces.

The Lord impressed upon my heart to write to a colleague, a friend of mine who was good friends with Carlos Annacondia. I had been discipled by Claudio Freidzon and Carlos Annacondia, some of the finest people. I asked my friend to arrange a time to go to Argentina with my wife and learn how they managed their deliverance tent. They are a frontline evangelistic ministry. Our team needed to learn from them. We arranged to leave Costa Rica, fly through Los Angeles, and left our three daughters with my in-laws, as we continued to Chicago. That was a 4-hour flight and then from Chicago to Buenos Aires was another twelve-



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

hour-flight. That was the longest flight I'd ever been on my life. I watched Shrek three times.

Although we had been in the air for twenty-two hours, we got in the cab and drove an hour and a half outside of the city to a marginalized community called Jose C. Paz. It's a small community of about 18,000 people. There is great need, and much poverty. Carlos had seven tents: one for logistics, one for deliverance, the main tent, a bookstore, you name it—they had it. We were immediately greeted by an 18-year-old female usher. She was oozing with Spirit-filled love. She escorted us into the tent, gave us privileged seats, found our backstage passes, and introduced us to Carlos.

The service begins at eight o'clock, and the music went on for about two hours. It was sort of like a power mix, where you're not really sure where one song starts and when the next one ends. I mean they weren't there for the music. They needed God to show up. This wasn't a revival. This is an evangelistic campaign.

You have unchurched people working their way through a two-hour worship service, because they're anticipating that God is going to show up in their life. They're full of pain. They need a miracle, and they don't know the Creator. Their only concept of God is the one that they've gotten from the traditional church, which basically says that God is far away and disconnected. And if you step out of line, you're going to get zapped.

At 10 o'clock, Carlos shows up, walks on the stage and preaches a very Christ centered message. At 10:30 p.m., he gives an altar call for salvation. Hundreds of people start coming forward. Tears are streaming down their eyes as they sense, the love of God, His passion for them, His acceptance of them. They feel that love.

The ushers are "Camilleros." They are the ones responsible for carrying people from the main tent into the deliverance tent. They are sporadically placed at that altar in strategic locations so that if someone manifests, they are prepared to take them immediately.

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?**

Now my wife and I have our all-access passes. We are standing right in front of Carlos. As the altar call continues, he shifts gears into what's called La Oración de Reprensión, which means "the rebuking prayer." As he begins to rebuke the powers of darkness, these people who have never encountered the presence of God begin to manifest a diabolical presence. Before they can even hit the ground, these Camilleros, or ushers, come out of nowhere, grab them, and escort them very safely, but very forcefully, into the deliverance tent through a human tunnel. This tunnel is formed by human chains and human inner locked arms.

One after another file into the deliverance tent. They scream. They shout. They grind their teeth. Some of them throw up. Many of them are violent. I turned to my wife and I said, "Honey, I need you to pray for me." She said, "Why? Are you going to manifest too?" I said "No, no, I'm in my right mind, but I have to find out what's going on in that deliverance tent." I jumped into the river of people and I glided my way into that deliverance tent. I'm expecting to be overwhelmed by people who are demon possessed. People who might beat me to a pulp.

When I walk into the deliverance tent, the opposite happens. There is more peace in that tent than in the main sanctuary. People are in their right mind. These people are being seated in a very orderly fashion on the perimeter of the tent facing outward. They're facing a counselor and behind them are two people who are interceding for them. The things that they confessed were amazing: adultery, idolatry, drug addiction, fornication, lying, cheating. All these different patterns were destructively dominating their lives. I discovered about 25-percent of these people were also attending local churches. That was problematic for me. How was that possible? So, I asked a counselor, "I can understand that a good percentage of these people who don't know Christ are manifesting a diabolical presence, but I'm also discovering that discovering that 25-to-30-percent of these people go to local churches. How is that possible?"

He responded, "Where else would God send them, if not to the local church? As a matter of fact, the local church is the only place that has the spiritual answers to spiritual problems. Of course, God is going to send someone who has a spiritual problem to a local church. The only problem is sometimes they don't

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

get the remedy in the local church.” As I heard that I realized that this message is evangelistic and at the same time revivalistic. It is entirely evangelistic, but also very renewing for those whose lives have become disenfranchised by the power of the enemy.

After an hour I emerge out of the deliverance tent. It’s closer to midnight, and I’m just in time to hear Carlos give an altar call for healing. He prayed for an hour for those who were sick. Then at 1:30am, he made a statement. “I am going to come off the platform and pray for each and every one of you individually.” When I heard that, I was blown away. Where in the world does this guy get his energy? He’s the last person to leave the lot. It’s now 2:30 in the morning.

The next night my wife and I get there at six o’clock and we meet his oldest son, Moses. I asked Moses, “What time did you guys get back to the house?” He told me 5:30 am. They got up at 8:00am. I said, “Why would you get up at eight o’clock?” He said, “Well, today is Sunday. Dad says that’s what Christians do. They go to church on Sundays.” They had been at this for thirty nights. They got home every night at three or four in the morning, but they always go to church on Sunday? He told me, “There are times we have flown in from Singapore. If our plane lands before church starts, we go to church before we unpack our bags.”

Now, friend that’s what you call commitment. That’s what you call discipline. That is an evangelist, who works on the streets, who is entirely supportive of his local church, and for the spiritual well-being of his family. That’s why Carlos is where he is and many of us are not.

I took that and I internalized it. I walked up to Carlos when he showed up that night, and I said, “Carlos, I have one question for you.” I have an audience with arguably the catalyst for revival in the 80s in Argentina. And I asked him this question. “To what do you attribute the revival in Argentina?” And I expected him to say, “Not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit,” says the LORD Almighty” (Zechariah 4:6).

Instead, Carlos Annacondia opened his Bible. He looked at me over the top of those rimmed glasses, if you’ve ever seen him speak you know exactly what

## **ARE YOU AN EVANGELIST OR REVIVALIST?**

I'm talking about, he looked back down at the Word. He said, If I speak in the tongues of men or of angels, but do not have love, I am only a resounding gong or a clanging cymbal. If I have the gift of prophecy and can fathom all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have a faith that can move mountains, but do not have love, I am nothing. (1 Corinthians 13:1-2). He went on to say, "If I can cast out demons and pray for the sick, and do all these miracles but have no love," he said, "I am nothing."

I understood in that moment what empowers the evangelist. It is not some sort of idea that God has called us to conquer the nations. It is not some kind of conquistador as they would say. It's not a power trip that we're on. It's because of the love of God for those who are suffering. This love beats in our heart and flows through our veins. It's seeing those who are incarcerated by the enemy who have put up jails and prisons all over the world. They simply peer through the bars of those jail cells. They can't break free on their own, knowing that Jesus is the only one who can. It's the love of God in us for them. That's what empowers the evangelist. That's what empowers the revivalist so that the church is trained to do the same.

I don't know exactly what God has called you to do, the group of people in which He's called you to speak. But I believe that God wants to anoint you. Above all things, He wants to give you his love for those who are suffering. I pray that this concept of the evangelist and the revivalist would be clear. But more than that, that the message of Christ for either audience would burn your heart with His love. Because people desperately need to know that He's come to set the captives free.



# **PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP**

Russell Benson

## **SYNOPSIS**

The evangelist is only one-fifth of God's design for His church. Learning to work with the pastors of local churches will help us fulfill the Great Commission. Evangelist Russell Benson gives us practical advice on how to have a successful evangelistic crusade.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Russell Benson's passion for world evangelism is only surpassed by his unequivocal thirst for Jesus Himself. Born in Long Island, New York, and raised in Port Charlotte, Florida, Russell found himself in the midst of a revival from an early age. After he graduated from Brownsville Revival School of Ministry in Pensacola, he then pioneered churches where he quickly realized the forging fire in his heart was to see the "equipping of the saints for the work of the ministry." In his current role with CfaN, he oversees the international operations for the

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

ministry and also ministers the good news throughout the world. He served as the executive campaign director for North America and is presently still acting as the CfaN's Fire Conference director. Married for over sixteen years, Russell and Brooke make their home in Orlando with their three children, Micah, Nathaniel, and Lucas.

For more info, visit: <https://www.cfan.eu/about-us/russell-benson>

## PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP

**A**s evangelists, we're not called to collect decision cards. We're called to make disciples. We make that our goal when we become intentional in following up with new converts and making sure they get plugged into the local church. Jesus said in Matthew 28:19, "Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit." Note with me here, He told us to make disciples, not just collect decision cards.

Discipleship is a net effect of intentional relationship in every style of evangelism. When we talk about crusade organizing at Christ for All Nations (CfaN), we put forth a model of a three-legged stool. The first leg is anointed preaching. The second leg is a good technical backup. And the third one is good organizing and planning. We know you understand the portion of good anointing or preaching. You are going to preach the word. Most likely, you also understand the importance of good technical backup. We must have sound so that our voices are propelled into the crowd. This requires good technicians. But that third one—good organizing and planning—we can easily let that fall away. If that third leg is crooked, the whole thing is going to fall. Good organizing and planning always includes partnering with the local church.

Evangelism must always flow through the local church. So much so, that Reinhard Bonnke would tell us that evangelism that doesn't go through the local church is just rubbish. We, as evangelists, aren't supposed to be above the church. Neither are we supposed to be below the church or go around the church. We should move through the local church because she is God's ordained vessel, structure, and method.

If there's not good church participation in your evangelistic event, it's not a crusade. It's just a conference. Our organization seeks to partner with the local church so much so that, as a ministry, if we don't see good church participation, including pastors, people in the pews, and bishops working with us, we will not go. I've been a part of more than one crusade as International Director of CfaN, where we have started crusade preparation but felt as though the church participation wasn't there. We've actually pulled back and went on to the next city.



**CRUSADE BUILDING ILLUSTRATION**

Reinhard Bonnke, the founder of the ministry Christ for All Nations, would say, “We should shake the dust off our feet and go on to the next city where the churches are ready. The prayer support will be there. The volunteer support will be there. And the follow-up system will be there.” He also used an illustration that I share every time I address this subject, whether I’m going to organize a crusade or teach. He said, “I, the evangelist, bring my net, and I go. I want to borrow the boats of the local churches. Together we will cast our nets into the human ocean, and together we will pull in a mighty catch. I promise not to take one single fish for myself but to leave them all with the local churches. Then I will dry my nets, mend my nets, and move on to the next place.”

I want you to notice with me four fundamental things about that illustration. First, Reinhard Bonnke says that the evangelist comes with the nets. Notice that the evangelist comes prepared. We’re called by God as evangelists to be soul winners, to be fishers of men. We have our nets, and we go into the cities prepared with the message but also ready to serve alongside the local church and alongside the pastor. Because the second thing I want to point out from this illustration is the boat. What is the boat? The boat is the local church. We want to borrow the boats of the local church because she is the vessel that will hold the fish. We can have nets, but I believe we have failed if our boats aren’t there to contain the catch. So, the local church is the boat. It is the vessel we are sent from; it is the vessel we work from, and it is the vessel in which the harvest is placed back into the local church.

Reinhard Bonnke taught that the evangelists and the church work together. We’re not a one-person superstar spectacle. We’re called to do this as a team. The evangelists and the pastor are the partners. Together, we pull in this harvest. This is a partnership that God has ordained. Then he would say, “We shake out our nets, and we leave all of them in the boat.” That’s very important. We don’t take the fish with us. We leave the fish (new converts) with the local churches who have been trained to handle the catch and to follow up with the harvest. The evangelist is not a law unto himself but must be willing to partner with the local church.

## **FOUR REASONS WHY EVANGELISTS PARTNER WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH**

**1. We believe it is God's Design that the Evangelist and the Pastor Work Together:** We see that in Ephesians 4:11-13. "So Christ himself gave the apostles, the prophets, the evangelists, the pastors and teachers, to equip his people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ.."

As evangelists, you have to realize something very important. You're only one-fifth of God's design. You are incomplete without the other five-fold ministry gifts in operation. We need the pastor. We need those different giftings working together in harmony as well. We're stronger together. The evangelist and pastor relationship are crucial to fulfilling God's design. So, not partnering with the local church is not an option.

**2. The Local Church Disciples the Converts, Not the Evangelist:** It is God's design that the church disciples the converts. That's why pastors have become pastors and why churches teach, preach, and disciple. It's what they're good at, and we recognize that fact. Don't get me wrong, CfaN and all of us as evangelists have a considerable role to play in discipleship. But that role involves making sure we partner with the churches, making sure the church is ready to receive the new converts, and ensuring that the communication is good between the decision-maker and then into the local church. The evangelist is there to bridge the gap between the crusade and the local church. We are not trying to avoid responsibility. We recognize that the local church is God's ordained way of discipleship.

**3. In this Partnership Between the Evangelists and the Church, the Saints are Equipped for Ministry:** We just read in Ephesians that all the ministry gifts are to equip the saints. Whether you're a pastor, teacher, evangelist, or prophet, all of us are called to equip the saints. So, when we as evangelists operate in our calling and partner with the local church, the local church is equipped for evangelism. It's beautiful to see that when we partner with local churches, the

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

fire for evangelism hits the church, and we see a revival of evangelists in the body of believers. This causes believers to *want to win the lost*. They want to tell their friends, they want to tell their neighbors, and they want to preach the gospel—this sets the church ablaze and mobilizes it into evangelism.

**4. The Church Brings the Vast Majority of the Lost to the Meetings:** If you want a successful gospel campaign of any kind, the key is to partner with the local church because they bring the lost to the event. Again, when we partner with the local church, they become spiritually combustible and ablaze with a fire for evangelism. However, they also know that if they can get their friends and their loved ones to the meeting, they will get saved and connected to the local church.

That increases the size of your event, the momentum of your event, and the population of lost people at the event. This means it's not just a bunch of church people but those who need to hear the message. This is key if you want the lost at your event—not just a conference for Christians. Those conferences have their place. We are to edify the saints as well. But an evangelistic crusade is about the lost.

One strategy to help churches in this is the use of gospel cards. Church members write down the names of their loved ones and commit to praying for them leading up to the campaign. Then, they invite those they have been praying for to the gospel crusade. And do you know what? Many of these people who have been prayed for and invited to the event actually come. We hear many testimonies of friends and family members getting saved and joining the local church. That is one of many ways to assist the church in partnering with you.

## WORKING WITH LOCAL PASTORS

When you talk about a gospel crusade or an event with a pastor, they are very excited about the event and can't wait to get involved. The pastor's eyes light up, and they're thrilled about it. Maybe they say, "Hey, how can we help? How can our church be mobilized for this event? How can we work together as a five-fold

## **PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP**

ministry team to maximize the gospel impact for the Kingdom of God in our area?

I can tell you we've heard that many times, but many times, pastors don't want to listen to it. They're not that excited about the gospel campaign you're organizing. Don't stop, and don't be discouraged. There are ways that we can approach pastors and open up the conversation. If we can get over some of the initial hesitations, some of the initial reservations or objections to our gospel meeting, they become our biggest supporters. And these become fundamental churches that work with us effectively. Let me encourage you, when you get pushback from pastors, when you hear their reservations, be ready to work with them, and be prepared to have an answer.

1. The first thing you need to do when working with pastors is show respect. We are coming into an area where a pastor has worked for many years. They have poured out their sweat and their prayers. They've been harvesting in that area and, at times, with minimal results. Then we come in all excited, believing that hundreds of people are going to be saved.

If we don't show the proper respect to that pastor, we can come off as a little arrogant. We have to remember that these pastors have been laboring before we ever got there—before we had a burden for their city. They've had a burden for a long, long time. So, my first bit of advice to you in working with pastors is to show proper respect. Also, be willing to work with all pastors, no matter their denomination. I happen to be a Pentecostal, so I feel more comfortable sometimes talking to Pentecostal pastors. But understand, when you organize a gospel event, you want to work with all pastors, all Bible-believing churches, whether they're Assemblies of God, Southern Baptists, or nondenominational — whatever they may be. That takes some thought and understanding but make sure to show respect.

It's essential to even think practically. How am I going to greet that pastor? Have I dressed appropriately? Am I going to bring him a gift? How am I talking to that pastor? Do I understand what their title is? These things may not seem important

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

to you, but if it's important to them and you want to work with them, they better be important to you. You need to be informed and understand any potential cultural sensitivities and denominational issues. Pastors are the gatekeepers to the church.

Many times, these bishops and pastors are gatekeepers to the city. If you're going to have a successful event in that city, you can't just go in and do your event without their support. For us as a ministry, if we don't have their support, we're going to the next town. God has put the pastors or bishops in that area, so we must show respect and seek to work with them. If you come in with that understanding, maybe not every time, but most of the time, they're going to open up their heart and work with you. You will be stronger because you have the support from that pastor and his congregation.

2. Secondly, be ready for skepticism. Pastors have not always had great experiences with evangelists. There are many reasons this takes place, but often it was because an evangelist came into their sphere of influence and didn't seek to partner together. They didn't seek to work with the local church, or they didn't show the proper respect. They didn't emphasize follow-up, which is vitally important. For whatever reason, we will encounter skepticism. The way to disarm it is through communication that assures the pastor that you will be financially responsible and that you understand the importance of the local church. Tell the pastor that you understand how you are designed to work together. That you want to work with him and submit to him. Tell him you want to see his church filled and blessed—where converts are becoming disciples. Be ready to have that conversation. You'll have much, much more success.

3. A third tip for working with pastors is to emphasize follow-up. Our follow-up system is a key component of the success of Christ for All Nations. When you talk to Pastors about follow-up and discipleship—that their church will grow and be blessed—they want to work with you. After partnering with local churches during our gospel campaigns in Africa, church growth explodes. They used to have one-hundred people, they now have 500 people or more. New believers come into

## **PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP**

the church and inject life. They are hungry to know more about the faith, if you emphasize that with pastors, they will get excited about your evangelistic efforts.

4. The final tip when working with pastors is to remind them that you don't want to do this alone. You want to work with him and his people. You want to equip his people. You want to equip them for evangelism. You are there to bless their church. Not only will a pastor get excited, but he'll become your best friend. He wants to see his church blessed more than you do. This doesn't just include new converts, but his church members are going to be fired up. His church members will be the ones who are trained and the ones who are equipped to work during the crusade.

## **HAVING A GOOD FOLLOW-UP SYSTEM**

Follow-up needs to be at the forefront of your mind when talking about gospel crusades, campaigns, or any kind of evangelistic endeavor. What is the follow-up? It is the process of getting the convert from the decision-making moment into the discipleship process within the local church. Again, we're not interested in making converts. We're interested in making disciples. That happens in the local church. That is the goal of Christ for All Nations, and that is the goal of the Global Evangelist Alliance. It should be your goal as well.

The follow-up process consists of taking new converts from the decision-making moment, that moment they raise their hand and say, "I want to accept Jesus Christ as my personal Lord and Savior," to the moment they are plugged in to the local church where they're going to be cared for, taught the word of God and poured into through discipleship. My friends, there is a huge gulf between these two events. The follow-up process is the bridge between conversion and discipleship. As evangelists, we are called to bridge the gap.

How do we bridge that gap in the follow-up process? We certainly don't want to leave people high and dry. After the decision, we don't want to leave them on the crusade field. We don't do this at CfaN, but I've been to large evangelistic events where hundreds of thousands of dollars, if not millions of dollars, were

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

spent, and thousands of people attended. Where a crystal-clear gospel message is preached that pierces the hearts of the people. The Holy Spirit convicts and people come to make a decision for Jesus. They say the prayer of salvation with tears streaming down their faces. And then that's it. There is nothing done after.

I fear to think of what happens to the people. I trust that many of them who had a genuine conversion experience will seek out a local church, but many don't. They don't know what to do next. They don't have anything in their hand. They don't have anyone to disciple them. They don't have anyone to say, "Hey, this is why it's important to go to church. This is why it's important to read your Bible and pray." They're just babes in Christ, and they're left there.

As much preparation as you put into planning your events, put as much preparation into what happens after the event. Coming up with a solid follow-up plan takes careful consideration. You need to think it through, you need to plan accordingly, and you need to organize efficiently. Make it a matter of prayer and budget well. One piece of advice is to learn from other ministries, asking specific questions concerning how a new convert gets from A to B. And of course, it first starts with partnering with the local church. If you have a good partnership with the local church, it increases the likelihood that your new convert will be plugged in. If you don't have a good partnership with the local church, the possibility they're going to get into the church is much less.

Many times, evangelists are more global in the way they think. They see the big picture. If organization, administration, and planning is not your strength, find someone to be on your team who is strong in that area. Maybe you need to hire a crusade director. This team member doesn't necessarily have to be the person with the evangelistic gift but makes sure they have the gift of administration. Make sure they can see the details starting with "A" and going through "B," "C," and "D." Make sure they know how to connect the dots and how to get that person from this point to the next. They need to be someone who can see the pitfalls. Someone you can trust to structure things and reduce the margin of error. Do you have someone who is gifted in this area who can help you be very

## **PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP**

intentional about these things? The follow-up process is a spiritual one, but it's also primarily practical.

We talked earlier about the crusade organizing stool having three legs. As an evangelist, you have the gospel preaching leg covered. You're going to preach the gospel. Most likely, you have the technical leg sturdy and stable. We all know how vital the technical gifts are to a crusade. But sometimes, the creaky one is that third leg—the organizational, planning, structure leg. When that leg wobbles, new converts get left behind. To have a stool that can hold its weight, we need to have three strong legs. So, let's look at how to strengthen that third leg.

First, to do good follow-up, you have to have participating churches. And when you have participating churches, you have volunteers. Ask the local participating churches to recruit volunteers for your event. They're the ones who will help with the follow-up process. Certainly, pastors can bring their congregations to the event, but that does not make them a participating church. A participating church believes in your event and sends volunteers to help.

Secondly, to have a good follow-up, you must train those volunteers. I've seen evangelists miss this. They have volunteers and tell them to show up on the day of the event. But then, the volunteers have no idea what they're doing. Listen, if a follow-up system is going to work, you need to have well-trained volunteers. Think about what your volunteers are going to do. Think about what is required in order to train them. What materials are you going to use? What are you going to tell them to do?

Here's just a small example. We always train our volunteers. It sounds very practical, but it's essential. They help collect the decision cards. They help fill out the decision cards. As a new convert decides to follow Christ, we need to get their information so they can be plugged into the closest participating church. Well, in order to do that, you've got to have good information. Your volunteer needs to be trained on not only meeting that convert at the point of decision, not only praying with them but collecting information and working with the



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

follow-up card. They also need to know the importance of writing neatly. Again, this is very practical, but if they're going to scribble that person's name, address, and phone number so that we can't read it, that's a problem. I cannot follow up with a person if I can't read the information on the card. These details need to be thought out. Our training includes how to neatly write and fill out decision cards because we've learned from our mistakes. If your follow-up system is going to be successful, make sure you have good training. Make sure your volunteers know exactly what you need from them.

The following detail in the follow-up process is that you must have a tool that takes new converts from decision to discipleship. We use a tool at Christ for All Nations called the *Now That You Are Saved* booklet. Evangelist Reinhard Bonnke wrote this booklet many years ago. We give one to every single person that makes a decision for Jesus. They don't leave our event without one. This booklet tells them about their decision and their next steps in Christ. Things like how to pray that they should read their Bible and why, and the importance of getting into a local church to be discipled. All of that information is in the *Now That You Are Saved* booklets, which we have also adapted into a video series.

Evangelist Daniel Kolenda, who is now the president of Christ for All Nations, created a short video series called *The Now That You Are Saved*. These videos take new converts through that booklet in a video form, which allows for a bit more modern content. So, we now have it in book form and video form. And we use both. They are essential tools. So much so that Christ for all Nations has printed more than 110 million copies of the *Now that You Are Saved* booklet, and we have printed them in over 60 languages and counting. So, I encourage you to have a well-created tool that offers next-step directions.

Do you have a tool to bridge the gap between decision and discipleship? What are you putting in their hand now? That tool is not only important because it's informational, but it's practical. There's a decision card at the back of that booklet, and that decision card is layered with carbon copies. When we meet that person at the decision point, we have our trained volunteers from participating churches use that card in the back of the booklet. Not only do we retain a copy,

## **PARTNERING WITH THE LOCAL CHURCH AND FOLLOW UP**

but they get a copy of the card for their records. That card, my friend, is gold. That card is then ushered into the follow-up system. We collect those cards from the volunteers. We process that information. It goes to the receipt committees, and then they are plugged into the closest local participating church. That card is the Golden Bridge.

We're saying to that individual that a local church pastor will contact you, and you need to get into the church. Then these cards are given to the local participating church. They now have a stack of cards that represent souls—new converts. Then the church can create teams that visit them. They invite them to church. And if we have good communication and good information, and the churches follow up with those individuals, the likelihood that those converts will go from decision-making to discipleship is high. That is our goal. We want to make the odds as high as possible for new converts to get plugged into the local body of believers. We then give the church advice on how to follow-up with them and how to make sure that they have some a new believer's class. In Africa, the churches take this to heart much of the time. They make these new believers their guests of honor. Also, you shouldn't just send them to any church because they're not likely to follow-up. It's the participating churches that have an interest in following up because they've been praying for your gospel campaign. They know that this will bless and grow their church and make a positive impact in their city.

There is one other thing that we do in the follow-up process. We check back after a few weeks. We check back with the new believer and ask, "Has a church contacted you? Have they reached out and invited you to church?" If we hear that didn't happen, we will work with another church, a different church, to follow-up with that individual. Ultimately, we want the odds as high as possible that this new convert is getting plugged into the local church because, again, we're called to make disciples, not just converts.

It's essential that we follow through with our illustration once the new converts are in that church, we move forward, it's time for us to mend our nets and clean our nets. We must go on to the next harvest; to the next city. We have to trust that the local church will be the local church. We must trust that they will be

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

what God has called them to be, God's ordained method of discipleship. And then we move on to the next city. There is another harvest to reap for the Lord. I'll leave you with this. Never forget that partnering with the local church and having a well-planned and executed follow-up system will ensure each convert has the best opportunity to be discipled and grow in their most precious faith.

# **THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH**

Raphaël Anzenberger

## **SYNOPSIS**

Through a deeply theological grid, Raphael Anzenberger masterfully takes us through two-thousand years of church history to show us how the role of the evangelist has changed. He offers compelling insight on why evangelists often operate outside of the Ephesians 4:11 mandate to equip the church and offers solutions as to how to move forward in our day.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

Raphael Anzenberger is an evangelist, speaker, and author serving globally, with a passion to raise a new generation of young apostolic leaders. He is President of imagoDei, President of France Evangelisation and CEO of the Global Evangelists Forum. He serves as ambassador at large for the board of the

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

Conseil National des Evangéliques de France (CNEF) and travels extensively as a consultant in evangelism, church planting, and leadership. He is Adjunct Professor of Intercultural Studies at Columbia International University (USA) and teaches globally on evangelism, apologetics, and missions. He is the author of Moi aussi je voudrais croire, mais... (BLF Europe, 2008), L'Evangéliste sous toutes ses formes (BLF Europe, 2013) and (re)Discovering the Ministry of the Evangelist (Believers Press, 2015). His first doctoral dissertation dealt with the topic of mentoring younger generations for evangelism (DMin, Columbia International University, College of Intercultural Studies, 2011). His second dissertation dealt with whole-nation saturation church-planting strategies (DPhil, Columbia International University, College of Intercultural Studies). He was named the Billy Graham Lausanne Scholar for 2018. Married with four children, Anzenberger lives in Nice (France).

For more info, visit: <https://anzenberger.net>

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

**T**here is a unique partnership between the evangelist and the local church. Before I jump to the topic itself, we need to agree on the role of the evangelist. In particular, what is his/her relationship when it comes to the local church?

According to the Bible, an evangelist is a person, male or female, qualified by God to speak of His name and His power to those who have yet to come to faith and bring them into a saving knowledge of Christ. Through a demonstration of the power of the gospel, they assist in stirring faith and belief in Jesus while bringing new believers into the body of the redeemed. So, we see already in that definition that the ministry of the evangelist happens both outside the church but also needs to bring them inside the church.

The second definition from a theologian named Van Gelderen, is this one, “A God-called man with a supernatural enablement to specifically focus on the ministry of the gospel through equipping the saints for gospel usefulness and through preaching the gospel to lost sinners.” Here again, we see that evangelists preach the gospel to lost sinners outside the church and also equip the saints and all the Christians for gospel usefulness inside the church.

Lastly, a third definition is taken from my book, “Rediscovering the Ministry of the Evangelist.” “To put things into perspective, theologians in particular are interested in helping the church better understand Scriptures. Pastors are particularly passionate about equipping the church for works of service and care. While evangelists are particularly concerned that the whole church takes the whole gospel to the whole world.”

All three definitions clarify for us what the relationship is between the evangelist and the church in general—whether it is the local church or the universal church. This role is both inside the church and outside the church. The most commonly known ministry of the evangelist is seen outside of the church. We think about preachers of the gospel, like Reinhard Bonnke or Billy Graham. Those men are true evangelists. They cross the cultural, social, and the religious barriers that they have in front of them, to proclaim the gospel and invite people to respond.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

In Acts, Chapter 8, we see Philip, the evangelist, going to Samaria. Samaria was a place where the religious landscape was very different from Jerusalem. He had to cross the religious barrier in order to proclaim the gospel in Samaria. We all know what happens. People come to Christ during Pentecost and then the church is established. Later on, we find Philip, the evangelist, running after a chariot carrying an Ethiopian eunuch. That certainly is a social barrier. Why? Ethiopia was a very different cultural setting, plus he's evolved in the political or the governmental platform. It was a different cultural platform than what Phillip the evangelist knew. But still, he got on the chariot, and he shared the gospel with the eunuch leading him to Christ. He even baptized him so that this man could bring the gospel back to Ethiopia.

We then see Phillip the evangelist in Caesarea near the Mediterranean Sea. Here we understand that he's actually planting the church with his family. Now Caesarea is a strong Roman colony. Again, it's a very different setting than Jerusalem. But still, as an evangelist, he crossed cultural barriers and preached the gospel in the city, leading people to Christ, discipling them, and then planting the church.

That's the ministry of the evangelist outside the church. I would say that is the aspect of ministry in which the evangelist is most known. Some of us forget that we also have a ministry inside the church according to Ephesians 4:11. God, in His sovereignty, gave gifts to the church. These are men and women given to the church so that they might equip the saints to do the work of ministry.

We understand that the role of the evangelist is to equip the saints for usefulness in sharing the gospel. But also, because the evangelist is particularly concerned that the whole church takes the whole gospel to the whole world. He or she plays a huge leadership role so that the church, whether it is the local church or the global church, continues to keep missions and outreach at forefront. That's where the evangelist comes in and brings balance with ministries that are more inward focused like that of a pastor or teacher. Suffice to say here, the role of the evangelist is happening both outside the church and inside the church.

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

Today, we are in a new season of the ministry of the evangelist. In the 1950s, 60s, 70s, 80s, because of the ministries of Reinhard Bonnke and Billy Graham, the world knew what an evangelist was—a preacher of the gospel. He was seen as someone who used a platform to draw massive crowds. Some are now doubting this model. There's been a growing skepticism, at least in the West, about the ministry of the evangelist. A friend of mine, Dr. Rice Brooks, in his dissertation studied how pastors in the U.S., especially those coming from Pentecostal and Charismatic backgrounds, understood the ministry of the evangelist.

Here are a couple of his findings, 50- percent of pastors that he interviewed for his dissertation said that there is a gift of evangelism. Maybe you have heard people talking about a gift of evangelism. Did you know that a gift of evangelism is not mentioned in the Scriptures? There are evangelists. Do you see the difference? It's the same with a gift of a pastor or a gift of an apostle. These are people who are gifts to the church, not spiritual gifts. If we believe there is a gift of evangelism, then only those who believe they have that gift will witness. Others will say, "It's not my gift."

I Peter 3:15 says, "But in your hearts revere Christ as Lord. Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect..." This is a directive for everyone—not just those who think themselves to have an evangelism gift. We are all called to share the gospel. We are all called to evangelize. The evangelist is indeed a gift for the church because he's the one who trains us on how to give an answer. The gift is the training. In other words, we shouldn't continue to say that there's a gift of evangelism because people will believe they are not required to evangelize. The fact that 50-percent of the pastors think this way is alarming.

Secondly, he discovered that the evangelist is a necessary component of Church growth. According to pastors in North America, they say, "Yes, we need to change lives because that is how the church grows. Yet at the same time, this study shows that there is a severe lack of identifying and training emerging evangelists in the church. On one side the pastors would say, "Yes, we need evangelists for the



## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

church to grow.” But then, when we surveyed the practices, they are not actually looking for those evangelists in their local church.

Some would argue that the reason for not looking for them is because they fear that the evangelist will misbehave in the church. We do know of some scandals involving evangelists. Maybe that’s why some colleagues of ours think that an evangelist is more a liability than an asset for the global church. We should wrestle with that question.

We certainly understand that in the past, and even today, scandals have occurred involving evangelists who’ve used their platform for benefiting themselves or they went into moral failures. Those kinds of things hurt the ministry of the evangelist and they do not help the church globally to embrace the gift. It is vitally important that evangelists look at our own character and the framework of our ministry so that we are accountable both financially, but also when it comes to moral ethics.

Therefore, Rice Brooks concluded we are only one generation away from losing the gift of the evangelist. If no one looks out for them and trains them, they will disappear. That’s why with the Global Evangelists Alliance, we are looking for evangelists in the field because we believe that Jesus is still giving evangelists to the whole church so that they can take the whole gospel to the whole world.

Through looking at church history, we can see how the role of the evangelist evolved during the ages. We looked at Phillip in the Book of Acts. We read the words of Paul in the letter of Ephesians. But when we move forward two thousand years later, the study of Rice Brooks tells us another story. What happened? It is vital we understand two thousand years of church history to see how they modified the relationship between the evangelist and the local church. It’s been a bumpy road. I believe that going through a quick survey of church history regarding the relationship of the evangelist to the church will help you understand why we are in a place where the evangelist’s ministry is not totally embraced in the global church today.

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

Let's start in Acts 13:2. Here we have the church in Antioch of Syria. They are worshipping and fasting. The Holy Spirit says, set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them. Ministries always start with a calling from the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit says, I am calling Barnabas and Saul to do a work. That means that what Paul and Barnabas are doing is simply following the leading of the Holy Spirit—discerning what His work is and attempting to do it.

The next day, Barnabas and Paul go on their first missionary journey. They are now in Asia Minor. Barnabas and Paul went on to the city of Derbe. “They preached the gospel in that city and won a large number of disciples. Then they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, strengthening the disciples and encouraging them to remain true to the faith. “We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God,” they said. Paul and Barnabas appointed elders for them in each church and, with prayer and fasting, committed them to the Lord, in whom they had put their trust” (Acts 14:21-23).

What I want you to see in that passage is that through the Holy Spirit, these men preached the gospel in places where it had not yet been proclaimed in order that many disciples would be made—and leaders appointed. Then they committed them back to the Holy Spirit who is responsible for this work. I hope that this is very clear.

Often, as evangelists, we say our task is preaching the gospel without actually looking at the fact that we also have a responsibility to make disciples. In the early church, they didn't say, “Oh, the evangelist will do this and somebody else will do that.” If you look at Phillip, he preached the gospel to the eunuch, but he didn't stop there. He baptized him. So, I think in some way, evangelists need to think about how the people who have received the gospel will continue their journey towards baptism and become integrated in the local church.

I understand that planning a mass evangelism event each year might be challenging. Billy Graham was careful to study ways that people received the gospel. When he preached, he also continued the journey with people so that they

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

would become disciples for Jesus. We have that responsibility as evangelists—to make sure that those who respond to the gospel make their way into the church. As a friend would say, if the harvest is not in the barn, it doesn't count.

I also want you to see that there were different kinds of leaders in the Book of Acts. The elders were responsible to shepherd the flock locally. There were also those who traveled around and preached the gospel. There were two lines of ministry in the early church. David Bosch, the great South African missiologist said, "At an early stage there were indicators of two separate types of ministry developing in the church." He said, "On one hand, a subtle ministry of bishops and elders and deacons. Those are the ones who are responsible to shepherd the flock locally. Then there is the mobile ministry of the apostles, the prophets, and the evangelists." Bosch said, "The first tended to push early Christianity toward becoming an institution. The second retained the dynamic of a movement. In the early years in Antioch, there was still a creative tension between these two types of ministry."

On one side there are local leaders, elders, and deacons. The Scripture says that anyone who would aspire to be an elder or a deacon desires a good thing. We understand that one needs to be driven by character in order to aspire to those kinds of ministry.

There is nothing really new about eldership in the New Testament because this is an Old Testament concept. We see elders in the Book of Job. New Testament apostles incorporated an Old Testament understanding of government (elders). They basically kept the same idea that an elder is somebody who can be trusted as a solid anchor for the local church. That's exactly the way they understood that ministry.

It is Christ Himself who gives the apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers to the church (Eph 4.11). It doesn't say "if anyone aspires to be an evangelist, he should pursue that office." It says that Jesus gave evangelists to the church. This means that it's not for all. It's for those who are called by the Holy Spirit like we saw with Barnabas and Paul. They were called for a specific work.

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

That's the picture we see in the early church. We see this model until the end of the first or early second century. The local church is established with elders and deacons, and then, there are mobile teams, which I call apostolic teams. These are the apostles, the prophets, and the evangelists along with pastors. There's a creative tension between the two, but they work together. There weren't many difficulties in relating to one another.

The church father Eusebius, wrote this, "Since it's impossible for us to enumerate the names of all that became shepherds or evangelists in the churches throughout the world in the age immediately succeeding the apostle, we have recorded as what is fitting, the names of those only who were transmitted to apostolic doctrine to us in writings still existent." You see that in the early church there were still evangelists who went and proclaimed the gospel. They then established shepherds who took on the leadership of the church.

Between the third and fifth centuries, church historians define this era as a monarchical episcopacy. During this time, the pastor-doctor function becomes one of bishops in the church. Now you have the bishop, and the elders and the deacons. The apostles, the prophets, and the evangelists basically disappear from the patriotic writing traditions. It's very strange that the apostle, the prophet and the evangelist, the "APE" as it's known, disappears from Church history. Where did they go? Giles said that "In the second century, we read of a clearly defined threefold church order in which monarchical episcopacy is the most important element. Center stage is the bishop, the unquestioned leader of the Christian community in a given city who presides over a council of elders and is assisted by a group of deacons." At that point, because the church becomes solidified around that kind of governance, the apostles, the prophets, and the evangelists tend to disappear. They do not disappear from the established church. What happens is they function as a monastic movement. They plant apostolic centers across the globe where people will continue to testify of the goodness of God through church planting.

Then comes the Reformation. We might hope that the Reformation would be a time to recover a more balanced governance system between the two original

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

lines of ministry. But Calvin, the great French Reformer said, “Although I deny not that afterward God occasionally raised up the apostles or at least the evangelist in their stead, as has been done in our time. I would argue that the office, I nevertheless call it extraordinary, because it has no place in churches duly constituted.” In other words, he said, “Yeah, maybe we see evangelists and apostles occasionally appearing in church history. It’s true that they have been around during reformation, but that doesn’t mean that they should be part of the official governing body of the church.”

He says next come pastors and teachers, with whom the church never can dispense. In other words, what Calvin says is, “Yes, there are prophets, apostles, and evangelists but he puts a strong parenthesis and says those are not normative in the governance of the church.” Also, now the pastor takes the role of bishop in the church.

Of course, we understand that Jesus still gives gifts to the church, whether Calvin likes it or not. But these mobile gifts feel like they have been moved away from the church. Because of this, it creates what we call the modern movement of missions starting in the 18th century. Missional agencies to the unreached people group on the earth, who do not know that there is a Jesus to save because there is no one around to tell them, are formed.

They want the church to send them, but the church is not ready to do so. That’s why, starting in the 18th century, the apostles and evangelists created missions’ agencies. They use the same type of governance, structure, and fund raising as commercial entities from that time forward. In every missions’ agency, there is always a dean and a board that governs.

The apostles and evangelists created those agencies to be able to exist on their own, separate from the local church. Then, beginning in the Renaissance, about the 16th century and onward, we see the rise of theological education. Schools led by the pastors (doctors) are formed to be trained for ministry.

You now see the five-fold ministry offices diminishing into four in the 18th century. The pastors lead the local church along with the elders and deacons.

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

The apostles and evangelists form the modern mission's side. The theologian (Doctor) leads the theological education. No matter where you are: Asia, Africa, Europe, South America or North America, there are structural divides between the ministry offices. Often churches will send their students to a theological institution to be trained for ministry. When the mission agencies recruit the new students, the pastors get angry because they wanted the students to come back to the local church. But often the mission's groups will say, "No, this one's called to be an evangelist." This kind of structural divide is a problem.

I think the main reason the church has failed to put into practice the last command of our Lord Jesus Christ is because of a structural issue. In his book, Patrick Johnston said this, "Throughout church history, the lack of structural harmony or distortion of existing structure has paralyzed our obedience to that fundamental command." In all of that he is saying the role of the evangelist in the church, across two thousand years of church history, has been a bumpy road.

The challenge we face is how to recover the ministry of the evangelist for the local church. One where the evangelist doesn't only campaign in mission agencies or argue that the local church should actually support the ministry. It's a big challenge that we have inherited. It is part of our church history. We need to be mindful of it and not just oblivious to that fact.

Alan Hirsch, a contemporary missiologist said, "When the evangelistic function is in sync with other ministries, it results in the expansion of the faith through a response to God's personal call and organic numeric growth of the people of God." I like that because that's the challenge, isn't it? Yes, evangelists need to be recognized in their own calling. But if the ministry of the evangelist is not in sync with all the ministries including that of the pastor of the church, then we will fail when it comes to the extension of the faith. We need to work it out so that all of the Ephesians 4:11 ministries, free living ministries, can work in coalition, not in isolation. There has been too much isolation. I believe that's the key ingredient for the ministry of the evangelist to recover its genius in the church, whether it is locally or globally.

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

When I was in Malawi, I heard a lecture by Dr. Enson Lwesya, who is the vice chairman of the Assembly of God seminary in that country. He provided a very helpful typology of the ministry of evangelists today. He took the idea of the pyramid. At the top of the pyramid, you find the mass evangelists—Billy Graham, Reinhard Bonnke—those who are the face of evangelism. Dr. Lwesya said, “The more you go up, the less you will find them because it takes time to train mass evangelists. That’s why there’s so few of them. It also takes quite a massive amount of financial capacity, a communication capacity, and logistics capacity to run those kinds of ministries.”

I also believe very strongly that there are fewer of them because it’s a special anointing to be a mass evangelist. Not everyone is Luis Palau. Not everyone is Daniel Kolenda. Not everyone is Billy Graham. There is a special anointing on that kind of ministry. We need to recognize it and rejoice in it. That’s why also, the more you go up the pyramid, the less you will find those kinds of ministries—they are the spearhead of the ministry of the evangelist. If they fail in their ministry because of financial abuse or moral failure, it will have repercussions all the way throughout the pyramid. With the anointing comes a strong responsibility.

The second layer of the pyramid is what he calls the credentialed evangelist. He said, “They are evangelists who receive credentials for their ministry either through theological training or recognition by the church. They serve as itinerant evangelists, pastor evangelist or denominational evangelist—especially through church planting.”

You find credentialed evangelists most often in mission agencies. Very few denominations actually have categories for evangelists. I think the only country where I found credentialed evangelists, even theological education for those evangelists, was in Ghana. I was completely surprised to see in this country the maturity of the church to organize seminaries for evangelists so that they can be trained on behalf of the church.

## THE UNIQUE PARTNERSHIP BETWEEN THE EVANGELIST & THE CHURCH

He said the third layer of the pyramid is the lay evangelist. These are ordinary evangelists who carry on the task with or without recognition. “They are,” he says, “the silent workers in our congregations.” In other words, most evangelists are in our pews and they don’t even call themselves such. Why? Because they say, “I’m not Billy Graham or I’m not Reinhard Bonnke.” But if you are leading people to Christ, you have an urgency for the local church to do more for evangelism, and you want to train people to be better witnesses—you’re carrying the work of an evangelist. Therefore, you’re an evangelist. Because they don’t have the credentials or the public platform, they usually don’t consider themselves an evangelist.

The fourth layer in the pyramid is witnessing. This includes everybody in the pews—all Christians. Remember, all Christians are called to give an answer for the hope we have within us. We all are called to evangelize and share the good news. What Lwesya would say is that in order to maximize the partnership between the ministry of the evangelist and the local church, we need to invest in the bottom two layers of the pyramid. This means that all credentialed evangelists need to help the church recognize the lay evangelist in the pews. This takes place outside the church—much like Philip, crossing cultural, religious and social barriers, preaching the gospel, inviting people to respond. At the same time, it happens inside the church, equipping every believer to the usefulness of the gospel, being better witnesses, working with the local church so that missions stay at the forefront. He says that if we want to maximize the partnership between the ministry of the evangelist and the church, we need to celebrate all kinds of evangelists.

I believe that this is the challenge that we have in the coming decade. I do hope that we, as the Global Evangelists Alliance, will release an army of lay evangelists who will be able to discover the joy of carrying the beautiful ministry of the evangelist both inside and outside the church.





# **BIBLICAL UNITY AND EVANGELISTIC OVERFLOW**

Andrew Palau

## **SYNOPSIS**

Unity not only allows us to experience a lack of disruption as we work together, but it also pleases our heavenly Father. Andrew Palau reminds us that the days in which we live are difficult, but that there is a wide-open door to share the gospel. We will be more effective if we work together in the body of Christ to bring in the harvest.

## **MEET THE EVANGELIST**

For more than 25 years Andrew Palau has played a key role in the ministry of the Luis Palau Association. He has been instrumental in building the LPA model for citywide outreach as an evangelist, director, and key team leader. He has guided campaigns, led church relations efforts, trained thousands of believers in friendship evangelism, and proclaimed the good news of Jesus Christ in person to hundreds of thousands of individuals around the world through evangelistic

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

campaigns. Andrew's festivals have brought him and the Palau Association in partnership with thousands of churches in cities throughout Latin America, Africa, Asia, Europe, Australia, the Caribbean, and the United States of America. He and his wife Wendy have three children, Christopher, Jonathan, and Sadie. They live in Portland, Oregon, close to the world headquarters of the Palau ministry.

For more info, visit: <https://www.palau.org/andrew-palau>

**O**ur world seems as divided as it has never been before. Cultural, societal and religious polarization have become normative, and many have become suspicious, or even cynical, of others. Advances in information technologies, communications, globalization, and more, have not helped as one might have expected. As a matter of fact, there seems to be little to celebrate or bring hope—even in an increasingly post COVID culture. Yet as God’s servants, we should have great faith for the future; our faith reflex should be strong! Friends, the best is yet to come! Good days are ahead! In Jesus, our perspective of the world and perception of other believers make a real difference in the fruit of our ministry in the world. I want to focus this chapter on a key passage of Scripture—Psalm 133. It has deeply shaped my perspective of the world and perception of others in ministry.

Psalm 133 teaches us that God blesses our every effort toward unity. I heard my father, Luis Palau, emphasize this as a younger man when I first came to faith. It continues to guide our ministry as we partner with thousands of churches to shake cities, large and small, with the clear gospel message. Yes, the world is broken and divided, but the church remains God’s plan to bring hope, healing, and restoration through King Jesus. There is a connection between the proclamation of the gospel and unity—the winning of souls and encouragement as we live the abundant life.

### UNITY PRECEDES REVIVAL

Our ministry has served for more than sixty years. We’ve had the joy of spanning two generations and working in hundreds of cities. By the grace of God, we’ve seen and experienced much. Yet in our experience, we’ve never seen such openness to the gospel as we see right now. There is a broad and wide-open door for the proclaiming of the good news and the winning of souls. No one denies that the world’s systems are utterly failing. It’s so clear that foundations are being shaken causing a thirst for the gospel to be overwhelming. I have many friends in my neighborhood who are business owners, company directors, and high-level leaders. Some of them know the Lord and some don’t. Regardless of their faith background, when we sit down together, many say to me, “Andrew,

## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

everything has failed me. I have tried to do everything right. I'm a good person and yet still everything is falling apart." What's happened? In many ways, we're reaping what we've sown. The gods of this world are being revealed for what they are—worthless idols and failing systems that leave people hopeless, lonely, and forsaken. With that realization, desperation can set in. And if you are a pastor, it seems as if it all lands on you. Pastors are the ones who are taking the brunt of the desperation. Half of the people in your congregation are cheering you on for the way you handle situations and the words you speak. While the other half are leaving the church because of what you did or didn't do. There is so much pressure upon you. As an evangelistic ministry, we're sympathetic towards you. We want you to be encouraged. Strength can often be found in the company of other like-minded leaders. Pastor, you are not alone. We all want to see change and revival in our land. Change will come, revival will ensue, when we are able to put into practice the encouragement of King David in Psalm 133:1,

"How good and pleasant it is when God's people live together in unity! It is like precious oil poured on the head, running down on the beard, running down on Aaron's beard, down on the collar of his robe. It is as if the dew of Hermon were falling on Mount Zion. For there the Lord bestows his blessing, even life for evermore."

Don't you love the way David describes the unity needed to bring change and revival in our world? David's reign united Israel and qualifies him to write a Psalm that encouraged unity and a spirit of togetherness among God's people. Disunity sucks us down! When believers live together in unity, it is good and pleasant. The word "good" denotes the idea of excellence, of desirability, purity, and being beneficial. In this context, it can easily be attributed to moral goodness. The word "pleasant" denotes a sense of delightfulness, sweetness, or joyfulness. In life, you will find some things are good but not always pleasant. And then there are other things that are pleasant but not good—unity, however, is both good and pleasant.

The New Testament is full of stories and examples of Jesus promoting unity. But we must remember that true unity is only possible through His perfect sacrifice.

## **BIBLICAL UNITY AND EVANGELISTIC OVERFLOW**

In Christ, togetherness is truly possible only because He has broken the barriers that separate God and mankind. He has removed every sinful obstacle to living a gospel-centered life (Galatians 3:28). One example I am reminded of is the day of Pentecost in the book of Acts. In Genesis 11, we read about the tower of Babel and the division that came by the confusing of languages. In Jesus, this is all reversed in Acts 2, on the day of Pentecost as God brings the nations gathered in Jerusalem closer to His Son through Peter's preaching. That day we read that 3,000 people were added to the church... in one day! Unity and the corresponding fruit of ministry can lead to revival. Lord, do it again!

### **OUR UNITY IN THE GOSPEL**

The good news of the gospel restores the brokenness of the world and heals division that exists in the flesh. In God's incredible kindness toward us, He rescued us from the pit and transformed our lives. To those who repent, He gives freedom from sin, and the shame and guilt of our past is completely taken away because of the work of the cross. He's given us the power of the Holy Spirit, who indwells us, so that we might be strengthened and empowered for godly living. He's given us great power to live abundantly. And we have a tremendous promise of eternity with Him. We never have to fear death again. We will be able to face this life with full confidence and assurance that His presence and power, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, make all the difference in our lives. For that reason alone, out of gratitude and care and concern for the lost, we should be rescuing others, right? And, in all of that, God says that He will repay us if it costs us too much.

In His goodness, He says in Proverbs 24, "I will repay you for what you have done." We don't deserve it, but that is His promise. I hope you'll hold onto it. "If you falter in times of trouble, how little is your strength?" During difficult times, human nature says, "circle the wagons," right? When we "circle the wagons," we are taking care of our own. But God says, "Go! Make disciples. Rescue those who are staggering toward slaughter."

## **THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST**

I will always be grateful for those who sought to rescue me from spiritual death. My parents, and other believers, prayed for me and lived the Christian life as an example. They shared the gospel. I especially think of the pastors who were influential in my life. I was saved at a festival in Kingston, Jamaica. My parents had been praying for me and brought me there. I was lured by ideas of the beach, sunshine, and Red Stripe beer. I went to Jamaica for the things that I wanted. But God had other plans for me. And in that one moment of decision, which has led to a lifetime of adjustments and growth, I found unity—with my Savior, my Lord, and my eternal family in the church.

### **THE FRUIT OF UNITY: GREATER EVANGELISTIC OPPORTUNITY**

My life and ministry bear witness to the fact that where unity of the body prevails, evangelistic ministry often follows. God lives in unity and desires the church live in unity as well, fulfilling His mission purposes together as one Body. It was the pastors in Kingston, Jamaica, who opened the gospel door for me to enter. They set aside their second and third level issues, those ideas that are not unimportant but that are not essential to the gospel, to win my soul. It was here that I saw pastors and evangelists work together to rescue sinners from the eternal fire of hell. They were on a rescue mission, and they served God together. It was a clear example of this one powerful reality: greater unity in the body of Christ leads to greater fruit in the harvest! This takes us back to Psalm 133:1-3: “For there, the Lord bestows his blessing, even life forevermore.” I am encouraged every time I read this passage. I will be ever grateful to those leaders for my salvation, the promise of eternal life evermore, for me, as a result of their unity in evangelism. I am their fruit... the letter of recommendation for their actions.

How good and pleasant it is when we receive what God offers and share it with others in need. Think about it from this perspective. God is our perfect Father, and we are His family. We are His children. How good and pleasant it must be for Him to look down upon His children and see us kindly serving and giving and sharing. How encouraged He must be when we care for one another and think of others above ourselves. How good and pleasant that must be.

## **BIBLICAL UNITY AND EVANGELISTIC OVERFLOW**

I am a father of three children. They are all great kids. Early in our parenthood, we seemed to just coast along in learning how to raise them. But we went through a season where they began to fight with one another. They were mean to one another and didn't think about how their actions might affect their siblings. They seemed to just jockey for position—two of them in particular. They were always at each other's throats, and it broke my heart. I remember thinking to myself, "Are they ever going to be friends?" It troubled me.

We went through some difficult days as a family. We didn't know if we would come out on the other side or just experience more turmoil. But now, it is a blessing to see all three of my children together. They are highly loving towards one another and enjoy each other's company. I was always troubled about what would happen to my family. Now I get to see them playing games together, laughing together. It is good and pleasing to my heart!

That's been one of the surprising benefits of the COVID situation for us, as we were together in a way I never expected would happen again. Before COVID, our oldest two were off at college. It was just our 12-year-old baby girl home with us. Yet, within a matter of weeks we found ourselves together once again, under one roof. To have that unique time together again and to see how God has knitted our children's hearts together—it's good and pleasant. It's like a dream come true. Imagine how God feels when His children work together in unity. Think of all the joy, the goodness, the pleasantness we bring to Him for just doing what we ought. When we unite as one body, with our common enemy being the evil one (and not the church down the road or another ministry) then we will be able to experience seasons of greater harvest than before. Unity is good for us, and it pleases God!

### **THE BLESSINGS OF PURSUING UNITY IN OUR EVANGELISM**

There's a richness brought to our lives when we work together in unity as the family of God. In Psalm 133, David describes it as precious oils with a pleasing aroma (Psalm 133:2). Oil was an expensive commodity in ancient times. Unity,



## THE SPIRIT EMPOWERED EVANGELIST

in a similar fashion, is rare and priceless! Just think of the way the oils are made. The commingling of all the special and unique elements, the herbs and spices. Each one brings a special component. In the same way, each person brings something unique to the church. By doing so, they bring a strength to the whole that wouldn't otherwise exist.

Oil is also a sign of hospitality and blessing. In Psalm 23:5 we are reminded of the role of our Great Shepherd: "...You anoint my head with oil; my cup overflows." The oil David describes in this Psalm is a generous helping. It is extravagant and far reaching (down Aaron's beard).

Psalm 133 also talks about the refreshing that comes into our lives when unity prevails. The picture that is painted is like the dew of Hermon falling on Mount Zion. This picture is much deeper than we can comprehend today. In the hot, dry, dusty desert, on the mountain, they could see the dew settling. It was life-giving water. Anyone who looked up would say, "Oh, that's where you want to go! When the dew comes in, it's cool and refreshing." Sometimes it even snows on Mount Zion. As the snow melts and the dew comes down into the valley, what had been nearly inaccessible is now right there among them. That's the refreshing experience we get to have as we learn to love one another more. There is richness and refreshing in unity, and that's when we see the pinnacle—the blessing of all blessings. He saved the best for last, "For there, the Lord bestows his blessing, even life forevermore."

Isn't our greatest desire to see everlasting life come into the hearts of people? For strategic thinkers, as you read the Word of God, you see things from the point of an evangelist. "How are we going to share this good news with more people? How are we going to lead them to Christ? I just want everybody to hear the Word of God—to hear the good news and respond!" There is such a mysterious and wonderful connection between effective evangelism and unity. And although its mysterious, it's practical as well. As we love one another and live together in unity, people are drawn toward us. If we're divided and bickering amongst ourselves, who wants to be a part of that? I mean, this is not brain surgery. It's the most obvious thing in the world. Who would want to be part of a family, or a

## **BIBLICAL UNITY AND EVANGELISTIC OVERFLOW**

group, that doesn't love and care for each other? God knows how powerful unity truly is and He says, "I will pour out within that place everlasting life."

### **LET'S NOT GO ALONE**

That is why we put such an emphasis on growing together and loving each other. This is how we receive that richness, that refreshing, and the blessing of everlasting life. We are believing and expecting, praying, and interceding for a fresh move of unity within the church on every continent. Let's take on the rescue mission we have been assigned, but let's not go alone—we need each other. We go as a unit. We go as a group. Each one with our special emphasis and particular calling, yet our gifts working together, commingling like that oil—bringing richness, eternal life, and refreshing to the souls of many. It's not unity for the blessing of our own soul. That's more selfish in nature, right? It's unity for the encouragement and blessing of our Father. So that as He looks down on us, He says, "How good and pleasant it is to have these as my children. Because of them, the cities and the nations will be changed."

It's unity for the sake of the mission. Every action toward it will add to your life and through your life. Let us ask God for the grace and power to do it.



 EMPOWERED21

# G E A

GLOBAL EVANGELIST ALLIANCE

**CALLING EVANGELISTS  
FROM AROUND THE WORLD!  
JOIN THE MOVEMENT.**

"A WORLD-WIDE NETWORK OF EVANGELISTS OF EVERY RACE, NATIONALITY,  
AND LANGUAGE UNITED IN ONE GOAL – WINNING THE WORLD FOR JESUS."

**BECOME A PART OF THE GLOBAL EVANGELIST ALLIANCE.**

**JOIN TODAY AT [JOINGEA.ORG](http://JOINGEA.ORG)**





# GEA

## EVANGELISM MASTERCLASS

DO YOU HAVE A HEART TO WIN THE LOST? ARE YOU  
CALLED TO BE AN EVANGELIST? THE GEA OFFERS TWO  
POWERFUL MASTERCLASS OPPORTUNITIES TO HELP YOU  
LEAD PEOPLE TO JESUS!

SIGN UP FOR A MASTERCLASS TODAY





# EVERYONE

REACHING EVERY PERSON ON EARTH

**EVERYONE IS A FUNDING INITIATIVE OF EMPOWERED21 HELPING  
EVANGELISTS AND FRONT-LINE MINISTRIES FULFILL THE GREAT  
COMMISSION BY PENTECOST 2033.**



**GIVE TODAY TO HELP REACH EVERYONE**





